A

NEW UNIVERSAL FRENCH GRAMMAR;

BEING

AN ACCURATE SYSTEM OF

FRENCH ACCIDENCE AND SYNTAX,

ON

AN IMPROVED PLAN.

BY NICOLAS HAMEL,

GRADUATE IN THE UNIVERSITY OF CAEN, AND RECTOR OF THE TOWN OF L'AIGLE IN NORMANDY.

THE SECOND EDITION,

WITH IMPROVEMENTS.

London:

PRINTED FOR LEE AND HURST, PATER-NOSTER ROW.

1797.

12953.b.

ADVERTISEMENT

TO

THIS EDITION.

WHEN the first edition of this Book was submitted to the Public, its Author was silent as to the defects which mark his predecessors. Among the principal, want of clearness is the one most generally lamented; and he was cautious not to increase the number of Grammars, until friendship declared the practical labour of four years had surmounted complexity of arrangement, and introduced a style, of which the highest praise is that of conciseness and simplicity.

M. HAMEL is not insensible to the *characters* bestowed upon the "Universal French Grammar" in public; he felt as he ought the commendations it received in private: but he would have ill deserved either, had not care been taken to remove every probable objection, and to make the necessary improvements. Accordingly, the present edition has received material emendations, corrections, and additions: the orthography will be found more accurate; a few rules have been cast over anew, and some examples altered, to attain perspicuity; and the series of verbs are enlarged, and rendered more useful, by the addition of the mood and preposition which they govern in French.

No. 54, SLOANE SQUARE,

Oct. 2, 1797.

PREFACE.

EVERY body confeſſes that the only ſure, and at the ſame time the ſhorteſt method to attain the perfection of a language, is to ſtudy it's principles after the moſt ſtrict and exact rules of grammar.

Conformably to this truth, generally acknowledged and confirmed by daily experience, I have compoſed this work on ſound principles and exact definitions, and in order to promote as much as poſſible the learning of this uſeful tongue, I have made a parallel of the French and Engliſh languages, which at the ſame time will confirm the Engliſh Student in the principles of his native tongue, greatly facilitate the underſtanding of the French rules, and point out the different genius of each language with accuracy and preciſion.

The firſt part of this Grammar, which has for object Pronunciation and Orthography, treats of the ſound of letters, vowels, and conſonants. The different ſorts of accents, the proper manner of uſing them, and their effects upon vowels, are put in the cleareſt light; the uſe of the apoſtrophe and capital letters; the different ſorts of punctuation and abbreviations, are treated in a method ſimple and conciſe, but however ſo comprehenſive, that I know not any thing which could be added on the ſame ſubject.

20 Mr 59

The idea that it would be an encouragement to a Pupil, if he could eaſily treaſure in his mind a great collection of words, prompted me to compare the analogy between the two languages; and after a mature conſideration, I have founded four pretty general rules, whereby the ſcholar may, in a few leſſons, and without much trouble, acquire ſeveral thouſand French words (page 22.)

The rules by which we diſtinguiſh the gender of nouns, are ſimple and comprehenſive; the maſculine ſubſtantives, which cannot be reduced under any rule of terminations, are ſet in alphabetical order: thus in a ſhort time, one may perfectly gain this important point, in which moſt Grammarians are very defective, and which many do not even attempt to explain.

The formation of the plural of nouns, and of the feminine of adjectives, is ſet in a new light (the firſt, page 35 and 36, and the ſecond, page 39 and 40.)

On the verb I have been very extenſive and methodical; having explained its nature and different ſpecies, I have fully conjugated a verb of each regular and irregular conjugations; to this explanation I have added (page 105 and 106) a new method, grounded upon principles, by which all regular and irregular verbs may be learnt with uncommon facility.

Having explained the different parts of ſpeech, in the manner which ſeemed the moſt natural, ſimple, and methodical, I proceed to the ſyntax, in which I treat of the union, concord, and diſpoſition of words, in the ſame order as I did before of their nature, declenſion, and conjugation.

This part, as the moſt eſſential and difficult, I have explained at large in a ſeries of clear, ſhort, and accurate rules, for the moſt part illuſtrated by inſtructive examples from good authors. The principles depend ſucceſſively on each other, and the knowledge of the preceding leads uſually to the underſtanding of that which follows. The rules which I have given for the conſtruction of the language are ſet in numerical order, and ſo diſpoſed, that they may be found as eaſily as a word in a dictionary; an advantage peculiar to this Grammar.

The moſt difficult points of the language, ſuch as the conſtruction of pronouns, the different modes of negation and interrogation, the diſtinction of tenſes, the uſe of the ſubjunctive mood, the government of verbs, &c. are particularly and fully explained.

This book is compleated by an alphabetical ſeries of the French verbs moſt in uſe, denoting at once, of what conjuga-

ſion they are, and the caſe they govern, by which two great difficulties in the French language will be removed.

My firſt object was to render this work fit for the uſe of ſchools, and ſo to adapt it to the capacities of the youngeſt learners, that, in beginning to learn French, they may begin it grammatically. For this purpoſe I have uſed my utmoſt endeavours to unite ſimplicity of method with clearneſs and preciſion; and having, in ſome meaſure, ſucceeded in this point, I may aſſert, after experience, that moſt of the rules and principles of this Grammar may, with the help of a good maſter, be underſtood and learnt by a child of ſix or ſeven years of age. Of this thoſe will be eaſily convinced who will attend to the natural order which exiſts in the different parts, to the preciſion of the rules, to the clearneſs of the ſtyle, and, in a word, to the work taken altogether, which, according to the opinion of ſeveral learned Gentlemen, is executed on a plan, new, ſimple, and much improved.

1796. 20 MA 59

TABLE OF THE CONTENTS.

Page

THE true definition of Grammar, - - 1
Diviſion of this work, - - - - *ib.*

PART I. *Of Pronunciation and Orthography.*

CHAP. 1. Of pronunciation, - - - 2
Of the French alphabet, - - - *ib.*
Of the French accents, - - - 8
Of vowels, - - - - - - 5
Of dipthongs, - - - - - 6
Of conſonants, - - - - - 7
Obſervations upon conſonants, - - 8
Remarks on the pronunciation of verbs, - 12
CHAP. 2. Of orthography, - - 13
Of the apoſtrophe and its uſe, - - 14
Of hyphens and cedilla, - - - 15
Of parentheſis, quotations, and abbreviations, 16
Of punctuation, - - - 17
Of capital letters, and their uſe, - - 18
An alphabetical ſeries of kingdoms, provinces, and towns, which have a different denomination in French and in Engliſh, - - 19
A method to learn the French denomination for the proper names of perſons taken from the Latin and Greek, - - - - 21
A method to learn eaſily a great collection of French words, - - - 22

PART II. *Different Parts of Speech.*

Page

CHAP. 1. Of the French articles, - - 24
CHAP. 2. Of ſubſtantives, - - *ib.*
Of the nature and ſpecies of ſubſtantives, - 25
Of the declenſion of nouns - - 26
How to diſtinguiſh when a noun is maſculine or feminine, - - - 27
Of ſubſtantives maſculine in one ſignification, and feminine in the other, - 34
Rules to form the plural of nouns, - - 36
How the compound words form their plural, 37
Of ſubſtantives which have no plural, - - *ib.*
Of ſubſtantives which have no ſingular, - 38
CHAP. 3. Of adjectives, and how to form their feminine, - - - 39
Of the plural of adjectives, - - 41
Of comparatives and ſuperlatives, - - *ib.*
Of cardinal numbers, - - - - - 43
Of ordinal numbers, - - - - 46
CHAP. 4. Of perſonal pronouns, - - 48
Of poſſeſſive pronouns, - - - 50
Of demonſtrative pronouns, - - 53
Of relative pronouns, - - - 54
Of interrogative pronouns, - - 55
Of indeterminate pronouns, - - 56
CHAP. 5. Of verbs and their ſpecies, - 57
Of moods, tenſes, numbers, and perſons of verbs, 59
Conjugation of the auxiliary *avoir*, - - 62
Conjugation of the auxiliary *être*, - - 63
Verbs conjugated with *to have* in Engliſh, and with *être* in French - - - 64
Of the regular conjugations, - - 65
Conjugation of reflected verbs, - - 82
Obſervations on the reflected verbs, - - 85
Verbs reflected in French - - - *ib.*
Several manners of conjugating a verb, - 86
Conjugation of the irregular verbs, - - 88

Page
Conjugation of the impersonal verbs, - 104
A new method to learn easily all verbs, regular and irregular, - - - 105
Of adverbs, - - - 108
Different sorts of adverbs, - - 109
Of prepositions, - - - 110
Of conjunctions, - - - 114
Of interjections, - - - 116

PART III. *Of Syntax.*

CHAP. 1. Use of the French articles, - 117
Articles used in French and in English, - 118
Articles used in French, and not in English, 119
Articles used in English, and not in French, 122
No article used either in French or in English, 123
CHAP. 2. Syntax of substantives, - 126
CHAP. 3. Syntax of adjectives, - 128
Of the concord and position of adjectives, - *ib.*
Of the government of adjectives, - - 131
Of the adjectives of dimension, - - 132
Of comparatives and superlatives, - - 133
CHAP. 4. Of personal and impersonal pronouns, 137
When they are conjunctive or disjunctive, - 137
Of the impersonal pronouns *it*, *they*, *them*, 140
Of the right placing of pronouns, - - 143
When the personal pronouns are to be repeated, 146
Distinction between *lui*, *elle*, and *soi*, - 147
CHAP. 5. Of possessive pronouns, - - 148
CHAP. 6. Of demonstrative pronouns, - 152
CHAP. 7. Of relative pronouns, - - 156
CHAP. 8. Of interrogative pronouns, - 159
CHAP. 9. Different sorts of interrogations, 161
CHAP. 10. Different species of *que*, - 164
CHAP. 11. Of indeterminate pronouns, - 166
Of *tout* and its various constructions, - 170

Page
Of the different ſorts of *quelque*, - - 172
CHAP. 12. Several modes of negation, - 177
Diſtinction between *pas* and *point*, - - 179
Negative expreſſions in French, and not in Engliſh, - - - - 181
Syntax of verbs, - - - 182
CHAP. 13. Of the government of verbs, - 183
CHAP. 14. Of the infinitive mood, - 188
Of the infinitive preſent, - - 189
Of the gerund, - - - 194
Of the participle. - - - 196
Concord of verbs with their nominative caſe, 198
CHAP. 15. Of the indicative mood, - 200
CHAP. 16. Of the uſe of the ſubjunctive, - 205
Words which govern always the ſubjunctive, 206
Words which govern ſometimes the indicative, and ſometimes the ſubjunctive, - - 208
Which tenſe of the ſubjunctive muſt be uſed, 211
CHAP. 17. Of the irregular verbs, - - 212
CHAP. 18. Of the imperſonal verbs, - 215
CHAP. 19. Syntax of adverbs, - - 217
CHAP. 20. Syntax of prepoſitions, - - 220
CHAP. 21. Of the French idioms, - - 222
A ſeries of the moſt curious French idioms, 228
CHAP. 22. The French proverbs moſt in uſe, 230
CHAP. 23. Which parts of ſpeech agree together 235
In which order muſt be placed the words of a ſentence, - - 236
Which words muſt be repeated, - - 238
Which words muſt be elegantly repeated, - 240
CHAP. 24. Diſtinction in French between many words which are expreſſed in the ſame manner in Engliſh, - - - 242
An alphabetical ſeries of the French verbs moſt in uſe, - - - - 249
Dialogue ſur l'Hiſtoire de France, - - 294
Dialogue ſur l'Hiſtoire d'Angleterre, - 298

20- MA 59

A

NEW GRAMMAR

OF

THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.

GRAMMAR is the art of reading, ſpeaking, and writing correctly; that is, as learned Perſons read, ſpeak, or write: or, according to the definition of a celebrated Author, Grammar is the art of reducing into rules, the manner of ſpeaking of a Nation.

A Grammar ought to treat, 1. of the ſounds and characters of a language; 2. of the nature of words of which it is compoſed; and 3. of the uſe which is to be made of them in ſpeech.

As I propoſe to conſider theſe objects in their different points of view, this work is naturally divided into three parts. The firſt has for its object Pronunciation and Orthography. The ſecond explains the nature or etymology of the different parts of ſpeech, the declenſion of Nouns and Pronouns, and the conjugation of Verbs. The third contains a ſeries of clear, ſhort, and accurate rules for the conſtruction or ſyntax of the language, and is compleated by a collection of the moſt curious French idioms and proverbs.

PART I.

OF PRONUNCIATION AND ORTHOGRAPHY.

CHAPTER I.

OF PRONUNCIATION.*

PRONUNCIATION is the right expreſſion of the ſounds and articulations of the words of a language.

The words are compoſed of ſyllables, and ſyllables of letters; the letters of the French tongue are the following, ſounded pretty near as thoſe under them are in Engliſh.

FRENCH ALPHABET.

A,	B,	C,	D,	E,	F,	G,	H,	I,	J,	K,	L,	M,
aw,	bay,	cey,	day,	a	eff,	gey,	auſh,	e,	kaw,	el,	m,
N,	O,	P,	Q,	R,	S,	T,	U,	V,	X,	Y,	Z,	&.
n,	o,	pay,	qu,	er,	s,	tay,	u,	ex,	egrec,	zed,	&.

Theſe five, *a, e, i, o, u,* are called vowels, becauſe they form alone a diſtinct ſound; we will ſpeak of *y* hereafter.

The others are called conſonants, becauſe they cannot be ſounded without a vowel.

When *i* and *u* precede another vowel, in the beginning of a word or of a ſyllable, they are moſt commonly conſo-

* *As the Engliſh cannot learn of themſelves the French pronunciation, (becauſe the true ſounds cannot be conveyed by rules), and as they obtain eaſily this very eſſential point with the help of a good maſter, a long treatiſe would be uſeleſs; therefore I will only give the rules, and make the obſervations, which to this day have been found the moſt clear, ſimple and uſeful, and which I have ſelected from the authors the moſt generally eſteemed.*

nants; then *i* is written *j*, and *u* is written *v*; thus *i* is a vowel in *il*, and a consonant in *je*; *u* is a vowel in *union*, and a consonant in *vanité*.

The vowels and consonants can be joined together as follows:

ba, be, bi, bo, bu, ... ab, eb, ib, ob, ub,
ca, ce, ci, co, cu, ... ac, ec, ic, oc, uc,
da, de, di, do, du, ... ad, ed, id, od, ud,
fa, fe, fi, fo, fu, ... af, ef, if, of, uf,
ga, ge, gi, go, gu, ... ag, eg, ig, og, ug,
ha, he, hi, ho, hu, ... ah, eh, ih, oh, uh,
la, le, li, lo, lu, ... al, el, il, ol, ul,
ma, me, mi, mo, mu, ... am, em, im, om, um
na, ne, ni, no, nu, ... an, en, in, on, un,
pa, pe, pi, po, pu, ... ap, ep, ip, op, up,
qua, que, qui, quo, qu, ...
ra, re, ri, ro, ru, ... ar, er, ir, or, ur,
fa, fe, fi, fo, fu, ... as, es, is, os, us,
ta, te, ti, to, tu, ... at, et, it, ot, ut,
va, ve, vi, vo, vu, ... av, ev, iv, ov, uv,
xa, xe, xi, xo, xu, ... ax, ex, ix, ox, ux,
za, ze, zi, zo, zu, ... az, ez, iz, oz, uz,

OF THE FRENCH ACCENTS *.

There are three different accents in French, called *acute*, *grave*, and *circumflex*.

The *acute* accent (´) gives to the vowel under it an acute ſound, the mouth being almoſt ſhut, as in the words *vérité*, *probité*, *prémédité*.

The *grave* accent (`) gives to the vowel under it a broad and open ſound, as in the words *accès*, *progrès*, *ſuccès*.

The *circumflex* accent (^) gives a long ſound to the vowel under it, as in the words *dôme*, *âme*, *flâme*, *flûte*.

* *I treat here of accents, becauſe they give to the vowels ſeveral ſounds, which cannot be eaſily diſtinguiſhed without ſome notion of them.*

THE ACUTE ACCENT IS USED,

1. Over the *é* final, in a ſubſtantive which ends in *té* in French, and in *ty* in Engliſh; ſuch are, *impiété* impiety, *charité* charity, *humanité* humanity, &c.

2. Over the firſt *é*, when there are two joined at the end of a noun, as in the words *armée, penſée, année, trophée, mauſolée.*

3. Over *é* followed by another vowel, which does not belong to the ſame ſyllable, as in the words *réel, créateur, réunion, préoccupé,* &c.

4. Over the *é* final in the participles of all verbs of the firſt conjugation, that is, which end in *er* in the infinitive mood; ſuch are *parlé, chanté, acheté, aimé, donné,* from *parler, chanter, acheter, aimer, donner.*

5. Over the *é* final of the firſt perſon ſingular of the indicative preſent in all verbs of the firſt conjugation, when they are uſed interrogatively, but not in other caſes; thus we write *je donne, je porte, je préfere,* &c. without accent, and *donné-je, porté-je, préferé-je,* with an accent.

6. Moſt commonly over *é* in the ſyllables *é, dé, pré,* and *tré,* when they are the firſt of a word. Example, *été, dépit, prélude, tréſor.*

7. Over the *é* which muſt be ſounded acute, whether it be in the beginning, the middle, or at the end of a word. Example: *prémédité.*

THE GRAVE ACCENT IS USED,

1. Over the open *è*, followed by the final *s*, as in the words *auprès, exprès, progrès,* &c.; but practice alone can teach when *e* is open or not.

2. Over *à* prepoſition, to diſtinguiſh it from *a* verb. Example: *il y* a *moins de gloire* à *vaincre un ennemi, qu'à lui pardonner quand on l'*a *vaincu.*

3. Over *là* adverb, to diſtinguiſh it from *la* article or pronoun. Example: *où* la *vertu finit,* là *le vice commence*; where virtue ends, there vice begins.

4. Over *dès* prepoſition or conjunction, to diſtinguiſh it from *des* article. Example: dès *que j'aurai de l'argent, j'acheterai* des *livres*; as ſoon as I have money, I will buy books.

5. Over *où* adverb, to diſtinguiſh it from *ou* conjunction; as, *où* êtes-vous? vous *ou* moi nous y irons.

THE CIRCUMFLEX ACCENT IS USED,

1. Over the laſt vowel ſave one of all verbs, in the firſt and ſecond perſons plural of the preterite of the indicative. Example: *nous parlâmes, vous parlâtes; nous agîmes, vous agîtes; nous reçûmes, vous reçûtes.*

Some authors put it alſo over the third perſon plural of the ſame tenſe, and ſome others do not: I adopt the opinion of the firſt, becauſe that final is always long; thus we write, *ils parlêrent, ils agîrent, ils reçûrent* with an accent.

2. Over the laſt vowel of the third perſon ſingular of the preterite ſubjunctive, but not of the preterite indicative: thus *il agit, il fit, il vendit, il reçut,* without accent in the preterite indicative; and *il agît, il fît, il vendît, il reçût,* with a circumflex accent in the preterite ſubjunctive.

3. Over the ſyllables which are long, and were formerly written with an *s*; ſuch are *honnête, tempête, impôt, gîte,* &c.

4. Over *dû* participle of *devoir,* to diſtinguiſh it from *du* article. On *crû* participle of *croître,* to diſtinguiſh it from *cru* participle of *croire.* On *sûr* adjective, to diſtinguiſh it from *sur* prepoſition; as, *je ſuis* ſûr *que le livre eſt* ſur *la table.*

5. Over *oi* through the whole conjugation, of the verbs which have their infinitive in *oître,* as *croître, paroître, diſparoître, connoître,* &c. That *oi* is ſounded as an *è* grave in all the tenſes and perſons of verbs, which have more than two ſyllables in the infinitive mood.

The other circumſtances in which theſe accents muſt be uſed in French cannot be explained by any general rules.

OF VOWELS.

When the vowels have an accent, they have a ſound either acute, open or long, according as the accent is acute, grave, or circumflex.

When they have no accent, they keep generally their natural ſound, that is, the ſound we have given them in the

alphabet, except *e*, which is often mute at the end of a word of ſeveral ſyllables, ſuch as *modeſtie*, *juſtice*, *il étudie*, &c. and alſo in the future and conditional of many verbs, thus *je ſerai*, *je ſerois*, *je prierai*, *je prierois*, are pronounced pretty near as if they were written, *je prirai*, *je prirois*, *je ſrai*, *je ſrois*.

Y has the ſound of an *i* ſimple between two conſonants; thus the words *myſtere*, *aſyle*, are pronounced as if they were written *miſtere*, *aſile*.

When *Y* is between two vowels, it has uſually the ſound of *ii*; thus *eſſayer*, *employer*, are pronounced as if they were written *eſſaier*, *emploier*.

OF DIPTHONGS.

A Dipthong is the meeting of two or more vowels in the ſame ſyllable. They are ſounded in French as follows:

1. *AO* is ſounded like an *a* in the words *paon*, *paone*, cock or hen peacock; and like an *o* in the words *aoriſte*, an aoriſt, *taon* a dun-fly, *Août* Auguſt.

2. *EAI* and *AI* are ſounded like an *é* acute in the preterite of all verbs of the firſt conjugation; thus, *je parlai*, *je mangeai*, *je donnai*, *je changeai*, are pronounced as if they were written *je parlé*, *je mangé*, *je donné*, *je changé*.

3. *AI*, *EAI*, *AIE*, in the middle or at the end of nouns, are ſounded pretty much like an *è* with a grave accent; ſuch are the words *maiſon*, *démangeaiſon*, *haie*, *plaie*.

4. *OI* and *EOI* have the ſound of an *è* grave in the imperfect and conditional of verbs; thus, *j'aimois*, *j'aimerois*, *j'avois*, *j'aurois*, *je voulois*, *je voudrois*, are pronounced nearly as if they were written *j'aimès*, *j'avès*, *je voulès*.

They are ſounded in one emiſſion of voice, like *oë* of *moëlle*, in the words ending in *oi*, *oie*, *oir*, *oire*; ſuch are the words *moi*, *emploi*, *ſavoie*, *vouloir*, *oratoire*.

5. *IE* is ſounded like an *i*, and *ue* like an *u*, in the different tenſes and perſons of the verbs which end in *ier* or *uer*, in the infinitive preſent: thus *je prie*, *je prierai*, *je prierois*, are pronounced, *je prirai*, *je prirois*; and *je remue*, *je remuerai*, *il remueroit*, are pronounced as if they were written *je remurai*, *il remuroit*.

6. *AU and EAU* at the end of a word, have the ſound of *ô* long; thus *couteau*, *chapeau*, are pronounced, *coutô*, *chapô*.

7. *GEA, GEO, GEURE,* without accent over *e*, are always ſounded *ja, jo, jure*; thus, *George, changea, jugeons, gageure,* are pronounced as if they were written, *Jorje, chanja, jujons, gajure.*

OF CONSONANTS.

RULE I.

When the following conſonants, *cc, dd, ff, ll, mm, nn, pp, rr, ſſ, tt,* meet together, we moſt frequently pronounce but one: Thus *accabler, offenſer, ſyllabe, commettre, oppoſer, arroſer, attirer,* are pronounced as if they were written *acabler, ofenſer, ſylabe, cometre, opoſer, aroſer, atirer.*

CC & *dd* are both ſounded, when they are followed by *e* or *i*, as in the words *accès, accident, addition, reddition.*

LL, mm, nn, and *rr,* are both ſounded when they are preceded by an *i* at the beginning of a word; ſuch are, *illégitime, immortel, innover, irréſiſtible.*

RULE II.

When either of theſe four conſonants, *d, s, t, x,* is the final of a word, and the next begins with a vowel or *h* mute, without a *comma* between them, it is uſually ſounded on the next word, as follows:

D is ſounded as a *t*; thus, *grand ami, quand il viendra, il attend à la porte,* are pronounced *gran tami, quan til viendra, il atten tà la porte.*

S is ſounded as a *z*, thus, *vous avez eu mes habits, nous irons à Paris,* are pronounced, *vou zave zeu mes ſhabits, uou ziron zà Paris.*

T is ſounded on the next vowel, thus, *Un ſavant homme, Je ſuis tout à vous, s'il vient à partir,* are pronounced, *un ſavan thome, je ſuis tou tà vous, s'il vien tà partir.*

X is ſounded like a *z*, thus, *ſix amis, heureux événement,* are pronounced, *ſi zamis, heureu zévénement.*

N, in the words *en, on, bien, mien,* and in adjectives which end in *en* or *on* is ſounded on the next word, when it begins

with a vowel: thus, *on apprend en étudiant avec méthode, mon bon ami, vous n'avez rien appris,* are pronounced as if they were written *on n'apprend en n'étudiant avec méthode, mon bon n'ami, vous n'avez rien n'appris.*

When the letter *n* is the final of a ſubſtantive, it is not ſounded on the next word, though it begins with a vowel; thus the following, *une intention excellente, un pain exquis, un vin agréable,* are pronounced in two diſtinct words.

RULE III.

Theſe ten conſonants *b, c, d, f, g, h, p, s, t, x,* are not ſounded at the end of a word, when the next begins with a conſonant; thus, *plomb, clerc, pied, clef, rang, almanac, coup, méchans, talent, jaloux,* are pronounced as if they were written *plom, cler, pié, clé, ran, almana, cou,* &c.

However, theſe ſix *b, c, d, m, r* and *s* are ſtrongly ſounded at the end of the names of heathen Gods, and of proper names of perſons, taken from the bible or from the latins: thus *Job, Jacob, Iſaac, David, Sem, Céſar, Darius, Jupiter, Venus, Marius,* are pronounced *Jobe, Jacobe, Iſaque,* &c.

Obſervations upon ſome Conſonants *.

C

C has the ſound of an *s* before *e* and *i,* thus *cela, ceci,* are ſounded *ſeſi, ſela.* C has the ſound of an *s* before *a, o* & *u,* when it has a cedilla under it, and of a *k,* when not; thus *façade, françois, reçu,* are pronounced *faſſade, franſois, reſſu;* and *cabinet, cochon, cuiſinier,* are pronounced *kabinet, kochon, kuiſinier.*

C has often the ſound of a *k* before *l, r,* or *t:* thus *clair, crayon, actuel,* are pronounced *klair, krayon, aktuel.*

C has the ſound of a *g* in *ſecond, ſeconder, ſecret, ſecretaire, ſecrétement;* it is not ſounded, when preceded by an *s* which

* *The letters not mentioned hereafter, are ſounded as in the alphabet, except in caſes expreſſed in the three preceding rules.*

belongs to the ſame ſyllable, thus *ſcience*, *ſcéne*, &c. are pronounced *ſience*, *ſéne*.

Ch are generally ſounded in French, as *ſh* are in Engliſh.

Ch followed by *a*, *o*, *u*, or *r*, are ſounded *ka*, *ko*, *ku*, *kr*, in the words taken from the Greek or Hebrew: thus, *Achab*, *Chanaan*, *chrétien*, *euchariſte*, are pronounced *Akab*, *Kanaan*, *krétien*, *eukariſtie*.

F

F final is ſounded in the words *Juif*, *neſ*, *actif*, *expreſſif*, *chef*, and *veuf*; but it is not ſounded in moſt others.

Neuf is pronounced *neuv*, when the next word begins with a vowel: thus, *il y a neuf ans*, *dix neuf hommes*, are pronounced *il y a neu vans*, *dix neu vhommes*.

G

G is ſounded like *j* before *e* and *i*; thus, *genou*, *gibier*, *mangeant*, are pronounced *jenou*, *jibier*, *manjant*.

G has a ſtrong and harſh ſound approaching *k*, when it is followed by *a*, *o*, *l*, *r*, *ua*, *ue*, or *non*; as in the words *gateau*, *goſier*, *glorieux*, *grandir*, *guenon*, *brigua*, &c. When *gn* do not begin a word, they are frequently ſounded *gni*; thus *agneau*, *compagnon*, *vous joignez*, *il regna*, &c. are pronounced as if they were written *agniau*, *compagnion*, *vous joigniez*, *il regnia*.

H

H is mute in the following words, and aſpirated in others.

habile,	*able.*	haſard,	*chance.*
habiller,	*to cloath.*	hazarder	*to venture.*
habit,	*a dreſs.*	hébeté,	*block-head.*
habiter,	*to inhabit.*	hébreu,	*hebrew.*
habitable,	*inhabitable.*	hégire,	*hegira.*
habitude,	*habit.*	hélicon,	*helicon.*
habitué,	*uſed.*	héliotrope,	*turn-ſole.*
habituel,	*habitual.*	hémiſphère,	*hemiſphere.*
haleine,	*breath.*	hémorragie,	*hemorrhage.*
hameçon,	*a fiſh-hook.*	herbage,	*paſturage.*
harmonie,	*harmony.*	herbe,	*graſs.*

herboriſte,	*herbaliſt.*	honnêteté,	*honeſty.*
héréditaire,	*hereditary.*	honneur,	*honour.*
héritier,	*heir.*	honorable,	*honourable.*
herbette,	*graſs.*	honoraire,	*honorary.*
herbierre,	*herb-woman.*	hopital,	*hoſpital.*
hériter,	*to inherit.*	hopitalier,	*hoſpitable.*
héréſie,	*hereſy.*	horiſon,	*horiſon.*
héréſique,	*heretick.*	horloge,	*clock.*
hermétique,	*chymiſtry.*	horreur,	*horror.*
hermine,	*ermine.*	horrible,	*horrid.*
hermitage,	*hermitage.*	hoſtie,	*victim.*
hermite,	*an hermit.*	hoſtilité,	*hoſtility.*
héroïne,	*an heroine.*	hôte,	*landlord.*
héroïque,	*heroical.*	hôteſſe,	*landlady.*
héroïſme,	*heroiſm.*	hôtel,	*hotel.*
hétérodoxe,	*heterodox.*	hôtellerie,	*inn.*
hétérogêne,	*heterogeneous.*	huile,	*oil.*
heure,	*hour.*	huître,	*oyſter.*
hexagône,	*hexagon.*	humanité,	*human-nature.*
hexamètre,	*hexameter.*	humble,	*humble.*
hirondelle,	*ſwallow.*	humecter,	*to moiſten.*
hiſtoire,	*hiſtory.*	humeur,	*humour.*
hiſtorien,	*hiſtorian.*	humidité,	*dampneſs.*
hiver,	*winter.*	humilier,	*to humble.*
hiverner,	*to winter.*	hyperbole,	*hyperbole.*
huit,	*eight.*	hypocrite,	*hypocrite.*
holocauſte,	*ſacrifice.*	hypothéque,	*mortgage.*
homélie,	*an homily.*	hydre,	*hydra.*
homicide,	*homicide.*	hydromel,	*mead.*
hommage,	*homage.*	hypocriſie,	*hypocriſy.*
homme,	*man.*	hydropiſie,	*dropſy.*
homogène,	*homogeneous.*	hymen,	*hymen.*
honnête,	*honeſt.*	hypothéſe,	*hypotheſis.*
honorer,	*to honour.*	hyacinthe,	*hyacinth.*

There are ſome more words in which *h* is mute, but they are ſo ſeldom uſed, that I have thought proper to omit them.

L

L preceded by *i* is ordinarily liquid, and ſounded *li*, thus *cuiller*, *vaillant*, are pronounced *cuilier*, *vailiant*.

M

M is ſounded as an *n*, when it is followed by *b*, *n*, or *p*, thus *autumne*, *ambition*, *comparer*, are pronounced *autonne*, *anbition*, *conparer*.

P

Moſt commonly *p* is not ſounded at all, when it is followed by a *t*, thus *exempt*, *baptéme*, *compte*, are pronounced *exent*, *batéme*, *conte*.

PH are always ſounded as an *f*, thus, *philippe*, *philoſophie*, are pronounced *filippe*, *filoſofie*.

Q

QU have the ſound of a *k*, thus, *quatre*, *qualité*, *marque*, are pronounced, *katre*, *kalité*, *mark*.

S

S has the ſound of a *z* between two vowels, and after the ſyllable *tran*; thus *oſer*, *raiſonner*, *tranſition*, are pronounced *ozer*, *raizonner*, *tranzition*.

S has the hiſſing ſound of the alphabet in other circumſtances, and particularly when it is double, or begins a word, as, *aſſiduité*, *ſuperſtition*, &c.

T

TI are ſounded *ſi*, 1, in the words which end in *trial* or *tieux*, as *martial*, *captieux*; 2, in the ſubſtantives which end in *tien* or *tience*, as *patient*, *patience*; 3, in the words which end in *tie* or *tion*, as *prophetie*, *action*, &c.

Remarks on the Pronunciation of Verbs.

We have already ſaid (page 6) that the dipthong *ai* is ſounded as an *é* acute, when it is in the firſt perſon of the preterite or future of a verb: ſuch as *je parlerai, je donnai, je donnerai*, &c.

We have ſaid alſo in the ſame page, that the final *oi*, which is in the imperfect and conditional of all verbs, ought to be ſounded pretty near as *ès* with a grave accent, ſuch are, *je venois, je viendrois, j'étois, je ſerois*. There remains only to add two remarks:

1. The final *oient*, which is in the third perſon of the plural in the imperfect and conditional tenſes of all verbs, is ſounded like *ois* of the firſt perſon of the ſame tenſe, only a little longer. Thus *j'étois* and *ils étoient, je penſois* and *ils penſoient*, are pronounced nearly alike.

2. The final *nt*, in the third perſon of the plural in the preſent and preterite of the indicative and ſubjunctive moods, thus, *je parle* and *ils parlent, je parlaſſe* and *ils parlaſſent*, are pronounced nearly alike.

Remarks on the Pronunciation of Poetry.

In poetry and in orations delivered in public, the finals of words are ſounded much more ſtrongly than in common converſation; and we may here eſtabliſh it as a general rule, that all the final conſonants are ſounded on the next word, when it begins with a vowel or *h* mute.

The following dipthongs, *ea, ie, io, ian, ion*, are generally ſounded with one emiſſion of voice in proſe, and with two in poetry: thus, for inſtance, *diadême, paſſion*, make two ſyllables in proſe and three in poetry.

In reading poetry we commonly ſtop a little in the middle of a long verſe, and we take breath at the end of every line, though there ſhould be neither ſtop, nor comma, provided the ſenſe does not ſuffer by it.

Words which have different Sounds and Significations.

Il bat,	*he beats.*	un françois,	*a french-man.*
un bât,	*a pack-saddle.*	françois,	*Francis.*
Il boite,	*he limps.*	jeune,	*young.*
une boîte,	*a box.*	jeûne,	*fast.*
il chasse,	*he hunts.*	matin,	*morning.*
une châsse,	*a shrine.*	mâtin,	*mastiff-dog.*
un foret,	*a gimlet.*	paroisse,	*parish.*
une forêt,	*a forest.*	il paroisse,	*he may appear.*
pécher,	*to sin.*	tache,	*a spot.*
pêcher,	*to fish.*	tâche,	*task.*
un pécheur,	*a sinner.*	tacher,	*to spot.*
un pêcheur,	*a fisher-man.*	tâcher,	*to endeavour.*

CHAPTER II.

OF ORTHOGRAPHY.

ORTHOGRAPHY is the art of using proper letters and figures in writing the words of a language.

In this Chapter I will speak, 1, of the proper spelling of words; 2, of the apostrophe; 3, of the hyphen and cedilla; 4, of the parenthesis, quotations, diæresis, and abbreviations; 5, of punctuation; and 6, of the use of capital letters.

Of the proper Spelling of French Words.

Orthography is divided into orthography of principles, and orthography of use.

The orthography of principles consists in the proper spelling; 1, of substantives in the plural number; 2, of adjectives in the plural and feminine; 3, of verbs in their different tenses and persons. These objects are fully explained in the second part of this grammar. The plural of substantives and adjectives are found in chapter the 2d, section the 4th; the

feminine of adjectives is deſcribed in chapter the 3d, ſection the 1ſt; and in the conjugation of verbs will be found the different terminations of their tenſes and perſons.

The orthography of uſe cannot be reduced to rules, therefore I will only make ſome obſervations which are conformable to the practice of good authors.

1. A word ſimple has uſually for final the ſame conſonant which begins the next ſyllable of the word derived from it; thus, *plomb* has for final *b*, *blanc c*, *camp p*, &c. becauſe the ſecond ſyllable of *plomber* begins by *b*, of *blancheur* by *c*, and of *camper* by *p*.

2. We write uſually *am*, *em*, *im*, *om*, *um*, and pronounce *an*, *en*, *in*, *on*, *un*, the words in which *m* is followed by *b*, *p*, or another *m*, ſuch are *chambre*, *emporter*, *emmener*, &c.

3. We write *dont* with a *t* when it is a relative pronoun, and with a *c* when it is a concluſive conjunction: as, les avantages *dont* nous jouiſſons viennent de Dieu; nous devons *donc* lui en rendre des actions de grace.

4. The word *quand* has for final a *d* when it ſignifies *when*, as *quand* viendrez-vous? *when* will you come? and a *t* when it ſignifies *as for*. Example: *quant*-a-moi, je le blame; *as for* me, I blame him.

5. We double the conſonants in moſt words derived from the *Latin*, when they are double in that language; thus *approuver* is ſpelt with *pp*, and *offrir* with *ff*, becauſe they come from the latin verbs *approbare*, *offerre*, in which theſe conſonants are double.

6. The conſonants *l*, *m*, *n*, *t*, are often doubled after *a* and *e*, when the ſyllable is to be ſounded ſhort or open, whether the words are derived from the Latin or not. Thus we write with a double conſonant, *ſalle*, *chandelle*, *femme*, *canne*, *colonne*, *patte*, *aſſiette*, &c.

7. *P* is often double when it comes after *a* or *o*, as *apprendre*, *opprimer*, &c.

When the Apoſtrophe muſt be uſed.

The apoſtrophe is a kind of comma formed thus (’), which is put at the top of a letter, to denote the eliſion of one vowel before another.

A and *e* ſuffer eliſion in the monoſyllables *le, la, je, me, ſe, de, ce, ne, que,* when the word following begins with a vowel or *h* mute: thus we write *l'oiſeau, l'amitié, l'homme, j'ai,* &c. inſtead of *le oiſeau, la amitié, le homme, je ai.*

They do not ſuffer eliſion before *oui, huit, huitième, onze, onzieme,* nor after a verb in the imperative mood. Thus we write, *il n'y a que oui ou non; de onze qu'ils étoient, il n'en reſte que huit; dites-le à mon pere;* and not *il n'y a qu'oui ou non;* nor *d'onze qu'ils étoient il n'en reſte qu'huit; dites l'à mon père.*

I ſuffers eliſion in the conjunction *ſi,* before the perſonal pronouns *il* or *ils,* but not before *elle,* nor any ſubſtantive whatever: thus we write *s'il vient, if he comes,* with an apoſtrophe; and *ſi elle vient, if ſhe comes,* without one.

A vowel never ſuffers eliſion in a word of more than one ſyllable, unleſs it be a conjunction compoſed of *que,* as *quoiqu'il diſe, la vertu eſt aimable;* not *la vert'eſt aimable.*

Of Hyphens and Cedilla.

The *Hyphen* (in French *le trait-d'union*) is a line acroſs, thus (-) which is uſed,

1. After a verb followed by the pronouns *je, moi, tu, nous, vous, il, elle, elles, le, la, les, lui, leur, y, en, ce, on:* as, parlé-je; viens-tu, dis-moi, voyez-les, &c.

2. Between ſeveral words ſo joined, that they make but one; as *avant-coureur, arc-en-ciel, cure-dent.*

3. Between the particles *ci* or *là,* and the word which precedes them: as, *celui-ci, celui-là, cet homme-ci, cette femme-là.*

N. B. When a verb interrogatively uſed ends with a vowel, we put a *t* with two *hyphens* between it and the pronoun *il* or *elle:* thus, a-t-il? Parle-t-elle? *Has he? Does ſhe ſpeak?* Viendra-t-il? *Will he come?* &c.

4. The *hyphen* is uſed at the end of a line, when there is no room to write the whole word. The ſyllables of a word are then divided, but not the letters of the ſame ſyllable: thus, for inſtance, if you cannot write the word *moment* in the ſame line, you may end it with *mo-* and begin the other with *ment*; but you cannot end one line with *mom,* and begin the other with *ent.*

The *Cedilla* is a little comma, thus, (,) which is put under *ça, ço, çu,* when they muſt be ſounded *ſa, ſo, ſu*; thus *menaça, conçu, leçon,* with a cedilla, are pronounced as if they were written *menaſſa, conſu, leſſon.* When *ca, co, cu,* have no *cedilla,* they are ſounded *ka, ko, ku*; thus *cabinet, cochon, cuiſine,* are pronounced as if they were written *kabinet, kochon, kuiſine.*

When *c* has the ſound of an *ſ* in the preſent of the infinitive, it has the ſame ſound in all the tenſes and perſons of the ſame verb, and therefore muſt have a *cedilla,* when it is followed by *a, o,* or *u.* This obſervation is worthy of notice.

Of Parentheſis, Quotations, Diæreſis, and Abbreviations.

1. A *Parentheſis* is made thus, ( ) and is uſed to encloſe an occaſional ſentence, interpoſed in the middle of the principal one. The uſe of *parentheſis* muſt not be too frequent.

2. A *Quotation* is a double comma (,,) put at the beginning, at the end, and at every line of the words quoted from an author. Example: *L'avarice eſt un vice infâme, voici ce qu'en dit Bourdaloue: "l'avarice corrompt tout, elle renverſe "tout, elle domine les hommes, elle en fait des eſclaves & les "abrutit."*

3. The *Diæreſis* (in French *le trema)* is two *dots,* thus, (..) put over the vowels *ï* or *ü,* when they are not of the ſame ſyllable as the vowel preceding; ſuch are *haï, laïque, Saül.*

4. The *Abbreviations* the moſt uſed in French are, *Mr.* for *Monſieur. Mde.* for *Madame. Mlle.* for *Mademoiſelle. MM.* for *Meſſieurs. SM.* for *Sa Majeſté. SM Imp.* for *Sa Majeſté Imperiale. SMTC.* for *Sa Majeſté très Chrétienne. SM Cath.* for *Sa Majeſté Catholique. SM Brit.* for *Sa Majeſté Britannique. SAR.* for *Son Alteſſe Royale. SAE.* for *Son Alteſſe Electorale. JC.* for *Jeſus Chriſt. CP.* for *Conſtantinople. MS.* for *Manuſcrit. Sept.* or *7bre.* for *Septembre. Oct.* or *8bre.* for *Octobre. Nov.* or *9bre.* for *Novembre. Dec.* or *10bre.* for *Décembre.*

Of Punctuation.

Punctuation is used in writing and printing, to denote the place where the reader should stop to take breath, or to distinguish more easily the different parts of a sentence.

The *Stops* are of six sorts, of which the names and shapes are as follow:

(,) une virgule . . . . . *a comma.*
(;) un point & une virgule . . . *a semi-colon.*
(:) deux points . . . . . *a colon.*
(.) un point . . . . . *a full stop.*
(?) un point d'interrogation . . *a note of interrogation.*
(!) un point d'admiration . . . *a note of admiration.*

These *stops* are necessary to avoid obscurity, to prevent misconstructions, and for the better understanding of what we read or write. Here follows the use which good authors make of them, and which is grounded upon reason.

A *Comma* is used, 1, in an enumeration, to distinguish the things enumerated, as, *les parties du discours* sont, *le substantif, l'adjectif, le pronom, le verbe, l'adverbe*, &c.; 2, to distinguish the different parts of a sentence, and to give the reader a proper time for breathing, as, *il est bien difficile, quelque philosophie qu'on ait, de souffrir long-tems sans se plaindre.*

We do not use a *comma* between the different parts of a short sentence, which can be sounded at one breath, as *dites-moi si je me suis trompé.*

A *Semicolon* is used to distinguish the two parts of a sentence of a pretty good length, when the first has a complete sense of itself, as, *on est coupable quand un garde son argent, sans vouloir s'en servir au besoin; c'est-là ce qu'on appelle avarice.*

A *Colon* is used after a sentence which could subsist alone, because it makes a complete sense of itself, but which is, however, followed by another, which explains or extends it, as, *il ne faut point se moquer des malheureux: car qui peut se flatter de ne l'être jamais.*

N. B. A *Semicolon* or a *Colon* can be, and are often, indifferently used for each other.

A *Full Stop* is used when the sentence is complete, as, *la charité est la première des vertus chrétiennes.*

A *Note of Interrogation* is uſed at the end of a ſentence which expreſſes a queſtion, as, *Mr. votre père eſt-il à la maiſon?* is your father at home?

A *Note of Admiration* is put at the end of a ſentence which expreſſes admiration or ſurpriſe, as, *que vous êtes heureux! que la vertu a de charmes!*

N. B. In reading a book, you muſt ſtop a little at every comma, a little longer at a ſemicolon, more at a colon than at a ſemicolon, and more at a full ſtop than at a colon.

Of Capital Letters.

Capital or great letters are uſed,

1. In the beginning of every ſentence in proſe: they are beſides uſed in the beginning of every verſe in poetry. Example:

Proſe. { La vertu eſt aimable. Le vice eſt odieux.
Virtue is amiable. Vice is odious.

Poetry. { Choiſiſſez des amis de qui la piété
Vous ſoit un ſûr-garant de leur fidélité.

2. All Chriſtian and proper names of perſons, kingdoms, provinces, towns, places, rivers, ſhips, mountains, dignities or profeſſions, and alſo the names of heathen Gods and Goddeſſes are written with a capital letter; as *Mars, Venus, Cicéron, Ceſar, Londres, la Thamiſe, les Alpes, la France, l'Angleterre, la Bourgogne*, &c.

3. The names of arts and ſciences begin with a capital letter. Example: *La Muſique & la Peinture ſont agréables. Le Grec & le Latin ſont deux langues mortes.*

AN ALPHABETICAL SERIES

Of the Kingdoms, Republics, Provinces, and principal Towns, which have a different Denomination in French and in Engliſh.

The letter E denotes an Empire, K a Kingdom, P a Province, T a Town, and R a Republic.

Engliſh.	French.	*Engliſh.*	French.
Africa.	*Afrique.*	Cracow, P.	*Cracovie.*
America.	*Amérique.*	Cyprus.	*Cypre.*
Antioch, T.	*Antioche.*	Damaſcus, T.	*Damas.*
Antwerp, T.	*Anvers.*	Dauphiny, P.	*Dauphiné.*
Apulia, P.	*Apouille.*	Denmark, K.	*Danemark.*
Athens, T.	*Athènes.*	Dover, T.	*Douvres.*
Attica, P.	*Attique.*	Dunkirk, T.	*Dunkerque.*
Auſtria, P.	*Autriche.*	Edinburgh, T.	*Edimbourg.*
Babylon, K.	*Babilone.*	Egypt.	*Egypte.*
Baſil, T.	*Bâle.*	England, K.	*Angleterre.*
Bavaria, P.	*Bavière.*	Epheſus, T.	*Epheſe.*
Bern, T.	*Berne.*	Epidaurus, T.	*Epidaure.*
Bohemia, K.	*Bohême.*	Epirus, P.	*Epire.*
Bologna, T.	*Boulougne.*	Flanders, P.	*Flandres.*
Braſil, P.	*Bréſil.*	Frankfort, T.	*Francfort.*
Bremen, T.	*Brême.*	Geneva, R.	*Genève.*
Brittany, P.	*Bretagne.*	Genoa, R.	*Gênes.*
Britain, K.	*Bretagne.*	Germany, E.	*Allemagne.*
Bruſſels, T.	*Bruxelles.*	Ghent, T.	*Gand.*
Burgundy, P.	*Bourgogne.*	Greece.	*Grece.*
Cairo, T.	*Caire.*	Guelderland, P.	*Gueldres.*
Calabria, P.	*Calabre.*	Hague, T.	*La Haie.*
Canterbury, T.	*Cantorbery.*	Hanover, P.	*Hanovre.*
Cappadocia, P.	*Cappadoce.*	Holland, R.	*Holande.*
Calcedonia, T.	*Calcédoine.*	Hungary, K.	*Hongrie.*
Cologn, T.	*Cologne.*	Japan, E.	*Japon.*
Copenhagen, T.	*Copenhague.*	Ireland, K.	*Irlande.*
Corinth, T.	*Corinthe.*	Italy.	*Italie.*
Cornwall, P.	*Cornouaille.*	Lacedæmon, T.	*Lacédémone.*
Corſica, K.	*Corſe.*	Lancaſter, P.	*Lancaſtre.*
Corunna, T.	*Corogne.*	Leghorn, T.	*Livourne.*

English.	French.	*English.*	French.
Leyden, T.	*Leide.*	Pharsalia, T.	*Pharsale.*
Lisbon, T.	*Lisbonne.*	Picardy, P.	*Picardie.*
Lisle, T.	*Lille.*	Poland, K.	*Pologne.*
Liverpool, T.	*Liverpole.*	Prussia, K.	*Prusse.*
Lombardy, P.	*Lombardie.*	Ratisbon, T.	*Ratisbonne.*
London, T.	*Londres.*	Saguntum, T.	*Sagonte.*
Lorrain, P.	*Loraine.*	Sardinia, K.	*Sardaigne.*
Lucca, R.	*Luques.*	Sardis, T.	*Sardes.*
Lyons, T.	*Lyon.*	Savoy.	*Savoie.*
Mantua, T.	*Mantoue.*	Saxony, P.	*Saxe.*
Mecca, T.	*Méque.*	Scotland, K.	*Ecosse.*
Mechlin, T.	*Malines.*	Sicily, K.	*Sicile.*
Mentz, T.	*Mayence.*	Sluys, T.	*L'Ecluse.*
Mexico, P.	*Mexique.*	Spain, K.	*L'Espagne.*
Miletus, T.	*Milet.*	Sparta, T.	*Sparte.*
Minorca, P.	*Minorque.*	Suabia, P.	*Suabe.*
Mogul, E.	*Mogol.*	Sweden, K.	*Suede.*
Morocco, E.	*Maroc.*	Tarsus, T.	*Tarse.*
Muscovy, E.	*Moscovie.*	Thebaid, P.	*Thebaïde.*
Nantz, T.	*Nantes.*	Thessaly, P.	*Thessalie.*
Nice, T.	*Nice.*	Toledo, T.	*Tolede.*
Nimeguen, T.	*Nimégue.*	Triers, T.	*Trêves.*
Niniveth, T.	*Ninive.*	Troy, T.	*Troie.*
Normandy, P.	*Normandie.*	Turkey, E.	*Turquie.*
Norway, K.	*Norvege.*	Tuscany.	*Toscane.*
Odenburg, T.	*Odembourg.*	Valencia, T.	*Valence.*
Ostend, T.	*Ostende.*	Venice, R.	*Venise.*
Otranto, T.	*Otrante.*	Vincenza, P.	*Vicence.*
Padua, T.	*Padoue.*	Wales, P.	*Galles.*
Palermo, T.	*Palerme.*	Warsaw, T.	*Varsovie.*
Persia, K.	*Perse.*	York, T.	*York.*

OBSERVATIONS.

1. All other names of kingdoms, provinces, and towns, ending in *a* in English, become French by changing *a* into *e* mute. Example:

English: Asia, Arabia, Cesarea, Carolina, &c.
French: *Asie, Arabie, Cesarée, Caroline, &c.*

2. The other names of towns ending in *burg*, become French by changing *burg* into *bourg*: thus,

Engliſh. Auſburg, Friburg, Hamburg, Brandeburg, &c.
French. *Auſbourg, Fribourg, Hambourg, Brandebourg,* &c.

3. Moſt of the other names not mentioned before, are the ſame in both languages.

A METHOD

To learn the French denomination of Heathen Gods, and of perſons taken from the Greek or Latin; and in what they differ from the Engliſh.

1. The proper names of men ending in Engliſh in *a*, are the ſame in both languages, thus we ſay,

Engliſh. Agrippa, Dolabella, Nerva, Caligula, &c.
French. *Agrippa, Dolabella, Nerva, Caligula,* &c.

2. The proper names of women and goddeſſes ending in *a*, become French by changing the final *a* into *e* mute. Example:

Engliſh. Julia, Cleopatra, Octavia, Agrippina, Diana, &c.
French. *Julie, Cléopatre, Octavie, Agrippine, Diane,* &c.

3. The proper names ending in Engliſh in *as*, become French by changing *as* into *e* mute. Example:

Engliſh. Mecenas, Eneas, Pythagoras, &c.
French. *Mecène, Enée, Pytagore,* &c.

4. The proper names ending in Engliſh in *es*, become French by changing that final into *e* mute. Example:

Engliſh. Demoſthenes, Ulyſſes, Socrates, &c.
French. *Demoſthène, Uliſſe, Socrate,* &c.

5. The proper names ending in *o* in Engliſh, become French by changing *o* into *on*. Example:

Engliſh. Dido, Cicero, Cato, Plato, Scipio, &c.
French. *Didon, Cicéron, Caton, Platon, Scipion,* &c.

6. The proper names ending in Engliſh in *us* or *ius*, are the ſame in French when they are of two ſyllables only. Example:

Engliſh. Brutus, Cyrus, Cræſus, Venus, &c.
French. *Brutus, Cyrus, Cræſus, Vénus,* &c.

7. Moſt proper names ending in *us* or *ius*, become French by changing that final into *e* mute, when they are compoſed of three or more ſyllables. Example:
Engliſh. Orpheus, Œſculapius, &c.
French. *Orphée*, *Eſculape*, &c.

8. Moſt proper names ending in Engliſh in *is* or *al*, are the ſame in both languages. Example:
Engliſh. Seſoſtris, Juvenal, Annibal, Aſdrubal, &c.
French. *Séſoſtris*, *Juvenal*, *Annibal*, *Aſdrubal*, &c.

9. Moſt proper names ending in Engliſh in *ander*, become French by changing *ander* into *andre*, as,
Engliſh. Alexander, Leander, Lyſander, &c.
French. *Alexandre*, *Léandre*, *Liſandre*, &c.

A Method to learn eaſily ſeveral Thouſand French Words.

RULE I.

Moſt nouns, ſubſtantive and adjective, which end in Engliſh with any of the ſeven following ſyllables, *ble*, *ce*, *de*, *ge*, *ne*, *ion*, and *ent*, are the ſame in French as in Engliſh. Thus we ſay in both languages:

1. *ble* Fable, viſible, incapable, noble, ſenſible, &c.
2. *ce* Province, diſtance, vice, evidence, force, &c.
3. *de* Ambuſcade, ſervitude, habitude, prélude, &c.
4. *ge* Charge, page, paſſage, ſiege, febrifuge, &c.
5. *ne* Machine, ſcene, famine, doctrine, &c.
6. *ion* Nation, opinion, union, education, religion, &c.
7. *ent* Prudent, diligent, patient, content, &c.

RULE II.

Moſt Engliſh words ending in any of the ſeven following ſyllables, *ary*, *ory*, *cy*, *ty*, *ous*, *our*, and *or*, become French by changing the final, thus:

1. ary, into *aire*, as military *militaire*, &c.
2. ory . . . *oire*, as glory *gloire*, &c.

3.	cy	into *ce*,	as	clemency	*clémence*, &c.
4.	ty	. . . *té*,	as	humanity	*humanité*, &c.
5.	ous	. . . *eux*,	as	dangerous	*dangereux*, &c.
6.	our	. . . *eur*,	as	favour	*faveur*, &c.
7.	or	. . . *eur*,	as	doctor	*docteur*, &c.

RULE III.

Moſt Engliſh verbs ending in *iſe*, *uſe*, *ute*, become French by adding an *r* to the final, thus: to

1.	iſe, add *r*,	as	baptiſe, realiſe,	*baptiſer*, *réaliſer*, &c.
2.	uſe . . *r*,	as	abuſe, excuſe,	*abuſer*, *excuſer*, &c.
3.	ute . . *r*,	as	diſpute, refute,	*diſputer*, *réfuter*, &c.

RULE IV.

Moſt Engliſh verbs ending in *ate*, *fy*, or *iſh*, become French by changing the final as follows:

	Engliſh.	*French.*
1.	ate, into *er*, as accelerate, abrogate,	*accélérer*, *abroger*, &c.
2.	fy . . . *fier*, as juſtify, liquefy,	*juſtifier*, *liquéfier*, &c.
3.	iſh . . *ir*, as aboliſh, accompliſh,	*abolir*, *accomplir*, &c.

Note 1. Moſt nouns which end in *y*, not preceded by *c*, *r*, or *t*, (of which before Rule 2) become French by changing that final into *ie*, and have the plural alike in both languages, thus:

	Singular	Plural
Engliſh.	folly, tragedy, fury;	follies, tragedies, furies.
French.	*folie*, *tragédie*, *furie*;	*folies*, *tragédies*, *furies*.

Note 2. Theſe three, *attribute*, *contribute*, *diſtribute*, are excepted from rule the third, and make in French, *attribuer*, *contribuer*, *diſtribuer*.

Note 3. There are ſome exceptions to theſe four rules, particularly to the words ending in *ty*; but they are very few, and you certainly will derive a great advantage from learning theſe finals by heart.

PART II.

OF THE NINE PARTS OF SPEECH.

THERE are in French, as in other languages, nine parts of ſpeech, called *article, ſubſtantive, adjective, pronoun, verb, adverb, prepoſition, conjunction,* and *interjection*: the five firſt are declinable, and the four others indeclinable.

CHAPTER I.

Of the Article.

The article is a little word, placed before a ſubſtantive, to ſpecify the extent of the ſignification in which it is taken.

The article is of three ſorts, which are called,

1. definite: *le* maſc. *la* fem. and *les* plural — *the*
2. indefinite: *un* maſc. *une* fem. it has no plural — *a* or *an*
3. partitive: *du* maſc. *de la* fem. and *des* plural — *ſome* or *any*

Their uſe and concord are explained in the ſyntax.

CHAPTER II.

Of Subſtantives.

This chapter is divided into four ſections: *the firſt* explains the nature and the different ſpecies of ſubſtantives; *the ſecond* ſpeaks of their caſes and declenſion; *the third* treats of their gender, and ſhews how to diſtinguiſh the maſculine from the feminine; *the fourth* has for object the plural of nouns, and its formation from the ſingular number.

SECTION THE FIRST.

Of the Nature and Species of Subſtantives.

A Subſtantive is a word which expreſſes the name of a perſon, or thing; ſuch as *homme*, man; *femme*, woman; *cheval*, horſe; *maiſon*, houſe.

There are three ſorts of ſubſtantives, called *proper*, *common*, or *collective*.

The ſubſtantive proper expreſſes ſome individual perſon, or thing, which cannot be divided into ſpecies; ſuch are, *Pierre*, Peter; *Londres*, London; *Caton*, Cato; *Paris*, Paris.

The ſubſtantive common can be ſaid of all objects of the ſame kind; ſuch are, *royaume*, kingdom; *riviere*, river; *ſoldat*, ſoldier; *homme*, man.

The ſubſtantive collective is a word ſingular, which preſents to the mind ſeveral perſons or things. The nouns collective are *general* or *partitive*.

A noun collective general repreſents the whole object; ſuch are, *la nation*, the nation; *l'armée*, the army; *la flotte*, the fleet.

A noun collective partitive repreſents only a part of the whole object; ſuch are, *un grand nombre*, a great number; *une foule*, a crowd; *la plupart*, the moſt part.

SECTION THE SECOND.

Of the Declenſion of Nouns.

As the French nouns do not change their termination in the ſame number, many grammarians pretend, that there are no caſes in our tongue; and that we expreſs by ſome prepoſitions, and particularly with *de* and *à*, what the Greeks and Latins expreſs by the different terminations of their nouns; but I think it is more ſimple and natural to give the ſame names to the ſame relations of things; and the rather, becauſe many of thoſe who learn French, learn at the ſame time Latin or Greek: therefore I admit of ſix caſes, called, *nominative*, *genitive*, *dative*, *accuſative*, *vocative*, and *ablative*.

However, as there can never be any miſtake about the *vocative*, for brevity-ſake, we will decline our nouns with five caſes only. *N* denotes the nominative, *G* the genitive, *D* the dative, *Ac* the accuſative, *Ab* the ablative.

DECLENSION

OF NOUNS WITH THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

1. *A Noun Maſculine.*

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
N. Ac.	le roi, *the king.*	les rois, *the kings.*
G. Ab.	du roi, *of* or *from the king.*	des rois, *of* or *from the*—
D.	au roi, *to the king.*	aux rois, *to the kings.*

2. *A Noun Feminine.*

N. Ac.	la reine, *the queen.*	les reines, *the queens.*
G. Ab.	de la reine, *of* or *from the queen.*	des reines, *of* or *from the queens.*
D.	à la reine, *to the queen*	aux reines, *to the queens.*

3. *A Noun beginning with a Vowel.*

N. Ac.	l'ami, *the friend.*	les amis, *the friends.*
G. Ab.	de l'ami, *of* or *from the friend.*	des amis, *of* or *from the friends.*
D.	à l'ami, *to the friend.*	aux amis, *to the friends.*

4. *A Noun beginning with an* h *mute.*

N. Ac.	l'homme, *the man.*	les hommes, *the men.*
G. Ab.	de l'homme, *of* or *from the man.*	des hommes, *of* or *from the men.*
D.	à l'homme, *to the man.*	aux hommes, *to the men.*

DECLENSION

OF NOUNS WITH THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

	MASCULINE.	FEMININE.
N. Ac.	un jardin, *a garden.*	une maiſon, *a houſe.*
G. Ab.	d'un jardin, *of* or *from a garden.*	d'une maiſon, *of* or *from a houſe.*
D.	à un jardin, *to a garden.*	à une maiſon, *to a houſe.*

DECLENSION
OF NOUNS WITH THE PARTITIVE ARTICLE.

	SINGULAR, MASC.	PLURAL, MASC.
N. Ac.	du pain, *ſome bread.*	des poiſſons, *fiſhes.*
D.	à du pain, *to ſome bread.*	à des poiſſons, *to fiſhes.*

	SINGULAR, FEM.	PLURAL, FEM.
N. Ac.	de la viande, *ſome meat.*	des oranges, *oranges.*
D.	à de la viande, *to ſome meat.*	à des oranges, *to oranges.*

DECLENSION OF PROPER NAMES.

N. Ac.	Londres, *London.*	Paris, *Paris.*
G. Ab.	de Londres, *of* or *from*	de Paris, *of* or *from*
D.	à Londres, *to London.*	à Paris, *to Paris.*

N. Ac.	Pierre, *Peter.*	Caton, *Cato.*
G. Ab.	de Pierre, *of* or *from Peter.*	de Caton, *of* or *from Cato.*
D.	à Pierre, *to Peter.*	à Caton, *to Cato.*

Obſerve, that all the nouns which begin with a vowel or *h* mute, take *l'* in the nominative or accuſative, *de l'* in the genitive, and *à l'* in the dative, whether they be maſculine or feminine.

SECTION THE THIRD.

How to diſtinguiſh when a Noun is maſculine or feminine.

A GENERAL RULE.

The nouns which have reference to males are of the maſculine gender, and thoſe which have reference to females are feminine. Thus *un homme*, a man; *un cheval*, a horſe; are maſculine: and *une femme*, a woman; *une jument*, a mare, are feminine. The gender of other nouns is known by their termination, as follows:

N. B. *Fiſhes, reptiles, and inſects, both male and female, are known in French by one gender only, which is generally diſtinguiſhed by their final, as are the inanimate objects, of which hereafter; many birds and wild beaſts are alſo of one gender only.*

MASCULINE TERMINATIONS.

RULE I.

Of thoſe Nouns which end in *x*, *eur*, *ion*, and *ſon*, when *s* is preceded by a vowel, the following only are maſculine.

1. *X*, as *le choix*, choice; *un crucifix*, a crucifix; *le flux*, the flux; *le reflux*, the reflux; *le prix*, the price; *le Styx*, the Styx.

2. *EUR*, as *le bonheur*, the happineſs; *le malheur*, the misfortune; *le cœur*, the heart; *l'honneur*, honour; *le deſhonneur*, diſhonour; *le labeur*, labour; *l'équateur*, the equator; *l'intérieur*, the inward part; *l'extérieur*, the outſide.

3. *ION*, as *un baſtion*, a baſtion; *un champion*, a champion; *le croupion*, the rump; *un lampion*, a little lamp; *un million*, a million; *le ſeptentrion*, the north; *un ſcorpion*, a ſcorpion.

4. *SON*, preceded by a vowel, as *du poiſon*, poiſon; *le blaſon*, heraldry; *un gazon*, a green turf; *l'horiſon*, the horizon; *un oiſon*, a young gooſe; *un peſon*, a ſteel-yard; *un tiſon*, a fire-brand.

RULE II.

Nouns which end in a conſonant, are of the maſculine gender, when they have any other final than *x*, *eur*, *ion*, and *ſon*, of which before.

This rule, which comprehends many thouſand words, has no other exceptions than the twenty-ſeven following.

la boiſſon,	drinking.	*une leçon*,	a leſſon.
une brebis,	a ſheep.	*la main*,	the hand.
de la chair,	fleſh.	*la mer*,	the ſea.
une chanſon,	a ſong.	*la mort*,	death.
une clef,	a key.	*la nef*,	the body of the church.
la cour,	the court.		
une cuiller,	a ſpoon.	*la nuit*,	the night.
une dent,	a tooth.	*la part*,	the part.
une dot,	a portion.	*la rançon*,	the ranſom.
la façon,	the making.	*la moiſſon*,	the harveſt.
la faim,	hunger.	*la ſoif*,	thirſt.
la fin,	the end.	*une ſouris*,	a mouſe.
une fois,	once.	*une tour*,	a tower.
une forêt,	a foreſt.	*une vis*,	a ſcrew.

RULE III.

All trees, and alſo all adjectives ſubſtantively uſed, are maſculine, whatever be their termination; ſuch are, for trees, *un houx*, an holy-oak; *un chêne*, an oak; *un hêtre*, a beech: and for adjectives, *un impie*, *un joueur*, *un chanteur*, *un danſeur*.

RULE IV.

Nouns which end in *a*, *i*, *o*, *u*, are maſculine, and alſo thoſe which end in *é* accented, and not preceded by a *t*: as, *un opéra*, an opera; *un oubli*, an oblivion; *un chapeau*, a hat; *le thé*, the tea.

Theſe three: *la foi*, faith; *la fourmi*, the ant; *la loi*, the law; are excepted from the final *i*.

Theſe ſix: *de l'eau*, water; *de la glu*, bird-lime; *la peau*, the ſkin; *la merci*, the mercy; *une tribu*, a tribe; *la virtu*, virtue; are excepted from the final *u*. The other finals of this rule have no exceptions.

RULE V.

Nouns ending in any of the following terminations, *age*, *ege*, *uge*, *aire*, *acle*, *aume*, *ême*, *iſme*, *iſte*, and *ôme*, are maſculine; as, *un payſage*, a landſcape; *un piége*, a ſnare; *le déluge*, the flood; *le vulgaire*, vulgar; *un oratoire*, an oratory; *un obſtacle*, an obſtacle; *un royaume*, a kingdom; *un diadême*, a diadem; *un ſophiſme*, a ſophiſm; *un atôme*, an atom.

La gloire, glory; *la machoire*, the jaw; *la mémoire*, memory; *la nageoire*, the fin; *une paſſoire*, a colander; *la victoire*, victory, are excepted from the final *oire*.

The word *de la crême*, is excepted from the final *ême*. The words *page*, *rage*, *cage*, *image*, are excepted from *age*.

FEMININE TERMINATIONS.

1. All nouns which end in *x*, *eur*, *ion*, and *ſon*, when *s* is preceded by a vowel, are feminine, except the words mentioned in rule the firſt of the maſculine terminations.

2. All nouns which end in *té*, *tié*, *ée*, *ie*, *ue*, *ace*, *adé*, *ude*, *ance*, *enſe*, *ence*, *enſe*, *iere*, *ure*, *lle*, *mme*, *nne*, *ſſe*, *tte*, are feminine, except the words mentioned in the following ſeries.

3. All nouns which end in *e* mute are feminine, except thoſe mentioned in rule the fifth, and in the following liſt.

N. B. *With the preceding rules, if properly attended to, you may invariably diſtinguiſh when a noun is maſculine or feminine.*

AN ALPHABETICAL SERIES

of all Nouns Maſculine not comprehended in the preceding Terminations.

A

Abyſme, *Abyſs.*
acte, *act.*
adverbe, *an adverb.*
adultère, *adultery.*
aigle, *eagle.*
albâtre, *alabaſter.*
alcove, *alcove.*
ambre, *amber.*
anathême, *anathema.*
ange, *angel.*
angle, *angle.*
antidote, *antidote.*
antre, *a cave.*
apoſème, *apozem.*
apoſtille, *a note.*
arbitre, *umpire.*
arbre, *a tree.*
arbuſte, *ſhrub.*
artifice, *artifice.*
aſthme, *aſthma.*
aſtre, *ſtar.*
aſile, *ſanctuary.*
athée, *an atheiſt.*
augure, *omen.*
auſpice, *auſpice.*
axe, *axis.*

B

Bénéfice, *a living.*
beurre, *butter.*
blâme, *blame.*
bitume, *bitumen.*
branle, *motion.*
bronze, *caſt copper.*
buſte, *buſt.*

C

Câble, *Cable.*
cadâvre, *a corpſe.*
câdre, *frame.*
calibre, *ſize.*
calice, *chalice.*
calme, *calm.*
camphre, *camphire.*
cantique, *ſpiritual ſong.*
caprice, *whim.*
caractère, *character.*
carroſſe, *a coach.*
caſque, *a helmet.*
catalogue, *a liſt.*
cauterre, *a cautery.*
centre, *centre.*
cercle, *a circle.*
chanvre, *hemp.*
chapitre, *a chapter.*
chiffre, *a cypher.*
cidre, *cyder.*
cierge, *wax-taper.*
cigne, *a ſwan.*
cilice, *hair-cloth.*
cilindre, *cylinder.*
cimeterre, *ſcymetar.*
cimetière, *church yard.*

clistère,	*a clyster.*
cloître,	*cloister.*
code,	*code.*
codicille,	*codicil.*
coffre,	*a trunk.*
colloque,	*a conference.*
colosse,	*a colossus.*
comité,	*committee.*
commerce,	*trade.*
concile,	*council.*
concombre,	*cucumber.*
cône,	*a cone.*
congre,	*a conger.*
compte,	*an account.*
conte,	*tale.*
comté,	*a county.*
contraste,	*contrast.*
côté,	*side.*
coude,	*elbow.*
couvercle,	*lid.*
crépuscule,	*twilight.*
crêpe,	*a crape.*
crible,	*sieve.*
crime,	*crime.*
cube,	*cube.*
cuivre,	*copper.*
culte,	*worship.*

D

Décompte,	*Discounting.*
dédale,	*maze.*
dégré,	*step.*
délire,	*delirium.*
démérite,	*demerit.*
désastre,	*disaster.*
désordre,	*disorder.*
diable,	*devil.*
dialogue,	*dialogue.*
diametre,	*diameter.*
dimanche,	*sunday.*
dilemme,	*dilemma.*
diocèse,	*diocese.*
divorce,	*divorce.*
dogme,	*dogma.*
domaine,	*domain.*
domicile,	*abode.*
doute,	*doubt.*

E

Ebène,	*Ebony.*
échange,	*exchange.*
édifice,	*edifice.*
éloge,	*praise.*
émétique,	*emetic.*
empire,	*empire.*
emplâtre,	*plaister.*
épisode,	*an episode.*
équilibre,	*equilibrium.*
équinoxe,	*equinox.*
esclandre,	*a bustle.*
escompte,	*discount.*
espace,	*space.*
évangile,	*gospel.*
exercice,	*exercise.*
exode,	*exodus.*
extrême,	*an extreme.*

F

Faîte,	*top.*
faste,	*ostentation.*
fiacre.	*hackney-coach.*
flegme,	*phlegm.*
fleuve,	*river.*
foible,	*weak side.*
foie,	*the liver.*
frontispice,	*frontispiece.*

G

Génièvre,	*juniper.*
génie,	*genius.*
genre,	*gender.*
germe,	*bud.*

geſte, *geſture.*
glaive, *a ſword.*
glôbe, *a globe.*
globule, *globule.*
gouffre, *whirlpool.*
grade, *a degree.*

H

Havre, *haven.*
homicide, *a murder.*
hôte, *land-lord:*

I

Jeûne, *faſt.*
incendie, *a conflagration.*
inſecte, *inſect.*
interrégne, *interregnum.*
intervalle, *interval.*
iſthme, *iſthmus.*

L

Labyrinthe, *labyrinth.*
légume, *pulſe.*
libelle, *libel.*
liége, *cork.*
lierre, *ivy.*
liévre, *hare.*
linge, *linen.*
l'ouie, *hearing.*
lucre, *profit.*
luſtre, *luſtre.*
luxe, *luxury.*

M

Mâle, *male.*
maléfice, *witch-craft.*
manifeſte, *manifeſto.*
marbre, *marble.*
martyre, *martyrdom.*
maſque, *a maſk.*
maſſacre, *a ſlaughter.*
mauſolée, *mauſoleum.*
membre, *member.*
mélange, *mixture.*
menſonge, *a lie.*
mérite, *merit.*
merle, *a black-bird.*
météore, *meteor.*
meuble, *furniture.*
mercure, *mercury.*
meurtre, *murder.*
miniſtère, *miniſtry.*
mobile, *motion.*
modèle, *model.*
monarque, *monarch.*
monde, *the world.*
monaſtère, *monaſtery.*
monopole, *monopoly.*
monſtre, *monſter.*
murmure, *murmur.*
myſtère, *myſtery.*

N

Navire, *ſhip.*
négoce, *trade.*
nombre, *number.*

O

Ongle, *nail.*
opprobre, *reproach.*
ordre, *order.*
ombre, *ſhadow.*
orgâne, *an organ.*
orge, *barley.*

P

Pacte, *a bargain.*
paradoxe, *paradox.*
parnaſſe, *parnaſſus.*
parricide, *parricide.*
parterre, *a flower-garden.*
participe, *participle.*
parjure, *perjury.*
parapluie, *umbrella.*

patrimonie, *patrimony.*
peigne, *a comb.*
pêne, *a bolt.*
peuple, *people.*
phénomène, *phenomenon.*
plâtre, *plaiſter.*
poëme, *a poem.*
poële, *a ſtove.*
poivre, *pepper.*
pôle, *the pole.*
pôre. *pore.*
portique, *portico.*
poûce, *thumb.*
précepte, *precept.*
précipice, *precipice.*
préjudice, *prejudice.*
prélude, *prelude.*
preſtige, *an impoſture.*
prétexte, *a pretence.*
principe, *a principle.*
problême, *a problem.*
prodige, *prodigy.*
proverbe, *proverb.*
pupître, *a deſk.*

Q

Quadre, *a frame.*

R

Régime, *a diet.*
regne, *reign.*
remede, *remedy.*
reptile, *a reptile.*
reproche, *reproach.*
reſte, *reſt.*
rêve, *a dream.*
rhume, *a rheum.*
riſque, *a riſk.*

S

Sable, *ſand.*
ſabre, *broad-ſword.*
ſacrifice, *ſacrifice.*
ſacerdoce, *prieſt-hood.*
ſalpêtre, *ſalt-petre.*
ſcandale, *ſcandal.*
ſceptre, *a ſceptre.*
ſchiſme, *a ſchiſm.*
ſcrupule, *a ſcruple.*
ſégle, *rye.*
ſervice, *ſervice.*
ſexe, *a ſex.*
ſiécle, *an age.*
ſigne, *a ſign.*
ſilence, *ſilence.*
ſonge, *dream.*
ſouffle, *breath.*
ſoufre, *ſulphur.*
ſpectre, *a ghoſt.*
ſtyle, *a ſtyle.*
ſubſide, *ſubſidy.*
ſucre, *ſugar.*
ſupplice, *a torment.*
ſymbole, *ſymbol.*
ſymptôme, *ſymptom.*
ſynode, *ſynod.*
ſynonyme, *ſynonyma.*
ſyſtême, *ſyſtem.*

T

Téleſcope, *teleſcope.*
terme, *a term.*
texte, *a text.*
théatre, *theatre.*
tôme, *a volume.*
tonnerre, *thunder.*
traité, *treaty.*
triangle, *triangle.*
trône, *a throne.*
trophée, *trophy.*
tropique, *tropic.*
trouble, *trouble.*
tube, *tube.*
tumulte, *tumult.*

V

Vacarme,	*uproar.*
vaſe,	*veſſel.*
ventre,	*belly.*
verbe,	*verb.*
verre,	*glaſs.*
veſtibule,	*entry.*
vice,	*vice.*
vinaigre,	*vinegar.*
volume,	*volume.*
ulcère,	*ulcer.*

Z

Zèle,	*zeal.*
zéphyre,	*zephyr.*

N. B. There are ſome more, but they are ſo little uſed, that I have not thought proper to inſert them.

SUBSTANTIVES

Maſculine in one Signification, and Feminine in another.

Un coche,	*a travelling coach.*
une coche,	*a ſow.*
un enſeigne,	*an enſign.*
une enſeigne,	*a ſign.*
un exemple,	*a pattern.*
une exemple,	*a copy.*
un foret,	*a piercer.*
une forêt,	*a foreſt.*
un garde,	*a keeper.*
une garde,	*a guard.*
le greffe,	*regiſtry.*
la greffe,	*the graft.*
un guide,	*a guide.*
une guide,	*a guidance.*
un livre,	*a book.*
une livre,	*a pound.*
un mémoire,	*a memorandum.*
une mémoire,	*a memory.*
un mode,	*a modality.*
une mode,	*a faſhion.*
un moule,	*a mould.*
une moule,	*a muſcle.*

un mousse,	*a ship-boy.*
la mousse,	*the moss.*
un page,	*the page to a king.*
une page,	*a side of a leaf.*
un parallelle,	*a comparison.*
une parallelle,	*a parallel-line.*
un pique,	*a spade.*
une pique,	*a pike.*
un poële,	*a stove.*
une poële,	*a frying-pan.*
un poste,	*an employment.*
une poste,	*a post-office.*
le pourpre,	*a sort of illness.*
la pourpre,	*the purple.*
un somme,	*a sleep.*
une somme,	*a sum.*
un souris,	*a smile.*
une souris,	*a mouse.*
le temple,	*the church.*
la temple,	*the temple of the head.*
un tour,	*a trick.*
une tour,	*a tower.*
un triomphe,	*a triumph.*
la triomphe,	*a trump at cards.*
un trompette,	*a trumpeter.*
une trompette,	*a trumpet.*
un vase,	*a vase.*
la vase,	*the mud.*
un voile,	*a veil.*
une voile.	*a sail.*

Personne M *when pronoun.*
Personne F *when substantive.*

SECTION THE FOURTH.

Of the Number of Subſtantives.

The number is the property which the nouns have, to denote one or ſeveral objects.

There are two numbers, called ſingular and plural. A noun is in the ſingular, when it denotes but one perſon or thing, as *un homme*, a man; *une maiſon*, a houſe: a noun is in the plural, when it denotes ſeveral perſons or things, as *des hommes*, men; *des maiſons*, houſes.

RULES TO FORM THE PLURAL OF NOUNS.

RULE I.

Nouns which end in *e* or *i* in the ſingular, become plural by the addition of an *s*: as, *un homme*, a man; *un ami*, a friend, ſingular: *des hommes*, men; *des amis*, friends, plural.

RULE II.

Nouns which end in *u* in the ſingular, take alſo an *s* for the plural, when *u* is preceded by a conſonant; as *la vertu, la tribu*, ſingular; *les vertus, les tribus*, plural. But they take an *x* when *u* is preceded by another vowel; as *le lieu, le chapeau*, ſingular; *les lieux, les chapeaux*, plural.

RULE III.

Nouns which end in *s*, *x*, or *z* in the ſingular, have both numbers alike; as *le fils, la voix, le nez*, ſingular; *les fils, les voix, les nez*, plural.

RULE IV.

Moſt nouns which end in *al* or *ail* in the ſingular, become plural by changing *al* or *ail* into *aux*; as *cheval, travail*, ſingular; *chevaux, travaux*, plural.

RULE V.

Nouns which end in *nt* in the ſingular become plural by the addition of an *s*, if the word is of one ſyllable only: as, *pont, dent*, ſingular; *ponts, dents*, plural; and moſt commonly by changing *t* into *s*, if the word is of ſeveral ſyllables; as, *enfant, prudent*, ſingular; *enfans, prudens*, plural.

RULE VI.

Nouns which in the ſingular end in any other conſonants than thoſe mentioned in the three laſt rules, become plural by the addition of an *s*; as, *maiſon, cour, jardin*, ſingular; *maiſons, cours, jardins*, plural.

The words *aieul, ciel, œil, tout*, are excepted, and make in the plural, *ayeux, cieux, yeux, tous*.

How Compound Words form their Plural.

1. When a word is compoſed of a ſubſtantive and a pronoun, both take the mark of a plural; as, *Monſieur, Madame*, ſingular; *Meſſieurs, Meſdames*, plural.

2. When a word is compoſed of two ſubſtantives not ſeparated by a prepoſition, both take alſo the mark of the plural; as, *un Garde-Suiſſe*, ſingular; *des Gardes-Suiſſes*, plural.

3. When a word is compoſed of two ſubſtantives ſeparated by a prepoſition, the firſt alone takes the mark of the plural: as, *un arc-en-ciel, un chef-d'œuvre*, ſingular; *des arcs-en-ciel, des chefs-d'œuvre*, plural.

4. When a word is compoſed of a ſubſtantive and a verb, or a prepoſition, the ſubſtantive alone takes the mark of the plural; as, *un garde-manger, un avant-coureur*, ſingular; *des gardes-manger, des avant-coureurs*, plural.

Subſtantives which have no Plural in French.

The nouns which have no plural are, 1, the names of metals taken in general, as, *l'or*, gold; *l'argent*, ſilver; *le cuivre*, copper; *le plomb*, lead; *le fer*, iron. Indeed we ſome-

times ſay, *les fers*, *les plombs*, &c. but then we conſider theſe metals as wrought, and not in general.

2. The name of habitual virtues and vices, ſuch as, *la foi*, faith; *l'eſpérance*, hope; *la charité*, charity; *la prudence*, prudence; *l'orgueil*, pride; *l'avarice*, covetouſneſs, &c.

3. The infinitives ſubſtantively uſed, as, *le boire*, the drinking; *le manger*, the eating, &c. not *les boires*, *les mangers*.

4. The following ſubſtantives:

l'abſcinthe,	*worm-wood.*	le miel,	*honey.*
l'artillerie,	*artillery.*	la moleſſe,	*effeminacy.*
l'attirail,	*train.*	la nobleſſe,	*nobility.*
le bonheur,	*happineſs.*	l'odorat,	*ſmelling.*
le courroux,	*wrath.*	l'ouïe,	*hearing.*
la diſette,	*ſcarcity.*	la pauvreté,	*poverty.*
l'enfance,	*infancy.*	le pourpre,	*red fever.*
l'eſtime,	*eſteem.*	le prochain,	*our neighbour.*
la faim,	*hunger.*	la rénommée,	*fame.*
le fiel,	*gall.*	le repos,	*reſt.*
la fumée,	*ſmoke.*	la réputation,	*reputation.*
la gloire,	*glory.*	le ſalut,	*ſalvation.*
le goût,	*taſte.*	le ſang,	*blood.*
l'encens,	*incenſe.*	la ſoif,	*thirſt.*
l'euchariſtie,	*euchariſt.*	le ſommeil,	*ſleep.*
la jeuneſſe,	*youth.*	la vieilleſſe,	*old age.*
le lait,	*milk.*	la virilité,	*manhood.*

Subſtantives which have no Singular in French.

les accordailles,	*eſpouſals.*	les ciſeaux,	*ſciſſars.*
les alpes,	*alps.*	les confins,	*confines.*
les annalles,	*annals.*	les confitures,	*ſweetmeats.*
les ancêtres,	*anceſtors.*	les décombres,	*rubbiſh.*
les armoiries,	*coat of arms.*	les délices,	*delight.*
les arrérages,	*arrears.*	les dépens,	*coſt.*
les atours,	*elegant dreſs.*	les écrouelles,	*the king's evil.*
les broſſailles,	*briars.*	les entraves,	*ſhackles.*
les calendes,	*calends.*	les entrailles,	*bowels.*
les catacombes,	*catacombs.*	les épouſailles,	*eſpouſals.*

les frais,	*expences.*	les obſeques,	*obſequies.*
les funérailles,	*funerals.*	les pleurs,	*tears.*
les gens,	*people.*	les proches,	*relations.*
les matériaux,	*materials.*	les premices,	*firſt fruits.*
les mœurs,	*manners.*	les pyrénées,	*pyrenees.*
les mouchettes,	*ſnuffers.*	les repréſailles,	*repriſals.*
les munitions,	*ammunition.*	les vivres,	*victuals.*

CHAPTER III.

OF ADJECTIVES.

THE *ſubſtantive* (as we ſaid before, page 25) is the name of a perſon or thing; *adjectives*, on the contrary, expreſs the qualities of a perſon or thing; as, *la vertu eſt aimable, le vice eſt odieux*; virtue is amiable, vice is odious. *Vertu* and *vice* are two ſubſtantives; *odieux* and *aimable* two adjectives.

A noun which makes good ſenſe with the words *perſon* or *thing*, is an adjective; a noun which cannot make any ſenſe with them, is a ſubſtantive. This is an infallible rule to diſtinguiſh them from one another: for inſtance, the word *good* is an adjective, becauſe we may ſay a *good* perſon, a *good* thing; but the word *man* is a ſubſtantive, becauſe we cannot ſay, a *man* perſon, a *man* thing.

SECTION THE FIRST.

How to form the Feminine of Adjectives.

As adjectives agree with the ſubſtantives to which they are joined or relative, they have alſo two genders and numbers. The feminine gender is formed from the maſculine, according to the following Rules:

I. Adjectives which end in *e* mute in the maſculine ſingular are alike in both genders, as, *ſage, brave, célèbre*, maſculine; *ſage, brave, célèbre*, feminine.

II. Adjectives which, in the maſculine gender, end in any of the following vowels, *é* accented, *i*, *o*, or *u*, become feminine by the addition of an *e* mute; as, *aimé*, *poli*, *connu*, maſculine; *aimée*, *polie*, *connue*, feminine.

The adjectives *beau*, *mou*, *fou*, *nouveau*, are written *bel*, *mol*, *fol*, *nouvel*, before a ſubſtantive maſculine which begins with a vowel or *h* mute, and make, in the feminine, *belle*, *molle*, *folle*, *nouvelle*.

III. Adjectives which end in *f* in the maſculine become feminine, by changing *f* into *ve*; as, *vif*, *actif*, *neuf*, maſculine; *vive*, *active*, *neuve*, feminine.

IV. The adjectives of the eleven following terminations, *el*, *eil*, *ul*, *an*, *ien*, *on*, *as*, *ais*, *os*, *et*, *ot*, double their final conſonants, and take an *e* mute for the final in the feminine gender; as, *cruel*, *pareil*, *nul*, *païſan*, *ancien*, *bon*, *gras*, *épais*, *gros*, *net*, *ſot*, maſculine; *cruelle*, *pareille*, *nulle*, *païſanne*, *ancienne*, *bonne*, *graſſe*, *nette*, *ſotte*, feminine.

V. Adjectives which end in *x* in the maſculine, become feminine by changing *x* into *ſe*; as, *jaloux*, *heureux*, maſculine; *jalouſe*, *heureuſe*, feminine.

Theſe four, *doux*, *faux*, *vieux*, *roux*, make, in the feminine, *douce*, *fauſſe*, *vielle*, *rouſſe*.

VI. Of the ſeven adjectives which end in *c*, theſe three, *blanc*, *franc*, *ſec*, make, in the feminine, *blanche*, *franche*, *ſeche*; the four others, *caduc*, *grec*, *public*, *turc*, make, in the feminine, *caduque*, *greque*, *publique*, *turque*.

VII. Thoſe ending in *eur*, become feminine by changing *eur* into *eure*, when they are not derived from verbs; as, *intérieur*, *extérieur*, maſculine; *intérieure*, *extérieure*, feminine; and by changing *eur* into *euſe*, when they are verbal adjectives; as, *danſeur*, *chanteur*, maſculine; *danſeuſe*, *chanteuſe*, feminine, from *danſer*, *chanter*.

Theſe three, *pécheur*, *enchanteur*, *vengeur*, make, in the feminine, *péchereſſe*, *enchantreſſe*, *vengereſſe*.

VIII. Adjectives which end in *teur* in French, and in *tor* in Engliſh, for the moſt part become feminine, by changing *teur* into *trice*; as, *acteur*, *inſtituteur*, maſculine; *actrice*, *inſtitutrice*, feminine.

IX. Adjectives of all finals not mentioned before becom

feminine by adding an *e* to the maſculine termination; as, *grand, divin, ſavant,* maſculine; *grande, divine, ſavante,* feminine.

Theſe ſix, *abſous, diſſous, frais, nud, long, verd,* are excepted, and make, in the feminine, *abſoute, diſſoute, fraiche, nue, longue, verte.*

N. B. You may obſerve, from the preceding rules, that all adjectives end in *e* mute in the feminine ſingular; and as thoſe which end in *e* mute form their plural by the addition of an *s,* all adjectives end in *es* in the feminine plural.

SECTION THE SECOND.

Of the Plural of Adjectives.

The adjectives form their plural like the ſubſtantives of which we have before ſpoken, and the rules given in chapter the 2d, ſection the 4th, can be applied to adjectives without any exception.

The following Adjectives have no Plural in the Maſculine Gender:

auſtral,	*ſouthern.*	littéral,	*literal.*
conjugal,	*conjugal.*	matinal,	*early.*
diamétral,	*diametral.*	naval,	*naval.*
fatal,	*fatal.*	nuptial,	*nuptial.*
filial,	*filial.*	paſtoral,	*paſtoral.*
final,	*final.*	paſcal,	*paſcal.*
frugal,	*frugal.*	ſpécial,	*ſpecial.*
jovial,	*jovial.*	total,	*total.*
libéral,	*liberal.*	trivial,	*trivial.*
luſtral,	*luſtral.*	vénal,	*venal.*

SECTION THE THIRD.

Of Comparatives and Superlatives.

A *Comparative* is nothing elſe than a compariſon of two or more objects, in order to know what proportion they bear to

one another: now as two objects can either be equal, ſuperior, or inferior to one another, there are three ſorts of comparatives, called of *equality*, *ſuperiority*, and *inferiority*.

The *Comparative of equality* is formed by prefixing the words *ſi* or *auſſi* to an adjective; as, je ſuis *auſſi* riche que vous; *I am as rich as you.*

The *Comparative of ſuperiority* is formed by prefixing the word *plus* to an adjective; as, je ſuis *plus* grand que vous; *I am* taller *than you.*

The *Comparative of inferiority* is formed by prefixing the word *moins* to an adjective; as, je ſuis *moins* heureux que vous; *I am* not ſo *happy as* you are.

The *Superlatives* increaſe or diminiſh to the utmoſt degree the ſignification of adjectives. They are of two ſorts; the one *relative*, and the other *abſolute*.

The firſt is formed by prefixing the article *le, la; les*, with *plus*, to the adjectives; as, j'ai vu *la plus* belle femme d'Angleterre; *I have ſeen* the handſomeſt *woman in England.*

The ſecond is formed by prefixing the adverbs *très* or *fort* to the adjective; as, je ſuis *très* malheureux; *I am* very *unfortunate.*

Comparatives and Superlatives formed irregularly.

Theſe three adjectives, *bon, mauvais, petit*, deviate from others in the formation of their comparatives and ſuperlatives, which are as follow:

	POSITIVE.	COMPARATIVE.	SUPERLATIVE.
adj.	bon, *good.*	meilleur, *better.*	le meilleur, *the beſt.*
	mauvais, *bad.*	pire, *worſe.*	le pire, *the worſt.*
	petit, *little.*	moindre, *leſs.*	le moindre, *the leaſt.*
adv.	bien, *well.*	mieux, *better.*	le mieux, *the beſt.*
	mal, *bad.*	pis, *worſe.*	le pis, *the worſt.*
	peu, *little.*	moins, *leſs.*	le moins, *the leaſt.*

We ſay alſo *plus mauvais, plus petit, le plus petit*; but never *le plus bon*, for a compariſon.

SECTION THE FOURTH.

Of Cardinal Numbers.

The *cardinal numbers* denote the quantity of persons or things, and answer to the question *how much? how many?* They are called *cardinal*, because they are the root of all others; and are as follow:

1,	un, *m.* une, *f.*	*one*,	I.
2,	deux,	*two*,	II.
3,	trois,	*three*,	III.
4,	quatre,	*four*,	IV.
5,	cinq,	*five*,	V.
6,	six, *pronounced* sis,	*six*,	VI.
7,	sept, *pron.* set,	*seven*,	VII.
8,	huit,	*eight*,	VIII.
9,	neuf,	*nine*,	IX.
10,	dix, *pron.* dis,	*ten*,	X.
11,	onze,	*eleven*,	XI.
12,	douze,	*twelve*,	XII.
13,	treize,	*thirteen*,	XIII.
14,	quatorze,	*fourteen*,	XIV.
15,	quinze,	*fifteen*,	XV.
16,	seize,	*sixteen*,	XVI.
17,	dix-sept,	*seventeen*,	XVII.
18,	dix-huit,	*eighteen*,	XVIII.
19,	dix-neuf,	*nineteen*,	XIX.
20,	vingt,	*twenty*,	XX.
21,	vingt-un *,	*twenty-one*,	XXI.
22,	vingt-deux,	*twenty-two*	XXII.
23,	vingt-trois,	*twenty-three*,	XXIII.
24,	vingt-quatre,	*twenty-four*,	XXIV.
25,	vingt-cinq,	*twenty-five*,	XXV.
26,	vingt-six,	*twenty-six*,	XXVI.
27,	vingt-sept,	*twenty-seven*,	XXVII.
28,	vingt-huit,	*twenty-eight*,	XXVIII.

* *We also say* vingt et un, trente et un, *&c. but never* vingt et deux, trente et deux.

29,	vingt-neuf,	*twenty-nine*,	XXIX.
30,	trente,	*thirty*,	XXX.
31,	trente-un,	*thirty-one*,	XXXI.
32,	trente-deux,	*thirty-two*,	XXXII.
33,	trente-trois,	*thirty-three*,	XXXIII.
34,	trente-quatre	*thirty-four*,	XXXIV.
35,	trente-cinq,	*thirty-five*,	XXXV.
36,	trente-ſix,	*thirty-ſix*,	XXXVI.
37,	trente-ſept,	*thirty-ſeven*,	XXXVII.
38,	trente-huit,	*thirty-eight*,	XXXVIII.
39,	trente-neuf,	*thirty-nine*,	XXXIX.
40,	quarante,	*forty*,	XL.
41,	quarante-un,	*forty-one*,	XLI.
42,	quarante-deux,	*forty-two*,	XLII.
43,	quarante-trois,	*forty-three*,	XLIII.
44,	quarante-quatre,	*forty-four*,	XLIV.
45,	quarante-cinq,	*forty-five*,	XLV.
46,	quarante-ſix,	*forty-ſix*,	XLVI.
47,	quarante-ſept,	*forty-ſeven*,	XLVII.
48,	quarante-huit,	*forty-eight*,	XLVIII.
49,	quarante-neuf,	*forty-nine*,	XLIX.
50,	cinquante,	*fifty*,	L.
51,	cinquante-un,	*fifty-one*,	LI.
52,	cinquante-deux,	*fifty-two*,	LII.
53,	cinquante-trois,	*fifty-three*,	LIII.
54,	cinquante-quatre,	*fifty-four*,	LIV.
55,	cinquante-cinq,	*fifty-five*,	LV.
56,	cinquante-ſix,	*fifty-ſix*,	LVI.
57,	cinquante-ſept,	*fifty-ſeven*,	LVII.
58,	cinquante-huit,	*fifty-eight*,	LVIII.
59,	cinquante-neuf,	*fifty-nine*,	LIX.
60,	ſoixante,	*ſixty*.	LX.
61,	ſoixante-un,	*ſixty-one*,	LXI.
62,	ſoixante-deux,	*ſixty-two*,	LXII.
63,	ſoixante-trois,	*ſixty-three*,	LXIII.
64,	ſoixante-quatre,	*ſixty-four*,	LXIV.
65,	ſoixante-cinq,	*ſixty-five*,	LXV.
66,	ſoixante-ſix,	*ſixty-ſix*,	LXVI.
67,	ſoixante-ſept,	*ſixty-ſeven*,	LXVII.
68,	ſoixante-huit,	*ſixty-eight*,	LXVIII.
69,	ſoixante-neuf,	*ſixty-nine*,	LXIX.
70,	ſoixante-dix,	*ſeventy*,	LXX.

71,	ſoixante-onze,	*ſeventy-one,*	LXXI.
72,	ſoixante-douze,	*ſeventy-two,*	LXXII.
73,	ſoixante-treize,	*ſeventy-three,*	LXXIII.
74,	ſoixante-quatorze,	*ſeventy-four,*	LXXIV.
75,	ſoixante-quinze,	*ſeventy-five,*	LXXV.
76,	ſoixante-ſeize,	*ſeventy-ſix,*	LXXVI.
77,	ſoixante-dix-ſept,	*ſeventy-ſeven,*	LXXVII.
78,	ſoixante-dix-huit,	*ſeventy-eight,*	LXXVIII.
79,	ſoixante-dix-neuf,	*ſeventy-nine,*	LXIX.
80,	quatre-vingt,	*eighty.*	LXXX.
81,	quatre-vingt-un,	*eighty-one,*	LXXXI.
82,	quatre-vingt-deux,	*eighty-two,*	LXXXII.
83,	quatre-vingt-trois,	*eighty-three,*	LXXXIII.
84,	quatre-vingt-quatre,	*eighty-four,*	LXXXIV.
85,	quatre-vingt cinq,	*eighty-five,*	LXXXV.
86,	quatre-vingt-ſix,	*eighty-ſix,*	LXXXVI.
87,	quatre-vingt-ſept,	*eighty-ſeven,*	LXXXVII.
88,	quatre-vingt-huit,	*eighty-eight,*	LXXXVIII.
89,	quatre-vingt-neuf,	*eighty-nine,*	LXXXIX.
90,	quatre-vingt-dix,	*ninety,*	XC.
91,	quatre-vingt-onze,	*ninety-one,*	XCI.
92,	quatre-vingt-douze,	*ninety-two,*	XCII.
93,	quatre-vingt-treize,	*ninety-three,*	XCIII.
94,	quatre-vingt-quator.	*ninety-four,*	XCIV.
95,	quatre-vingt-quinze,	*ninety-five,*	XCV.
96,	quatre-vingt-ſeize,	*ninety-ſix,*	XCVI.
97,	quatre-vingt-dix-ſept,	*ninety-ſeven,*	XCVII.
98,	quatre-vingt-dix-huit,	*ninety-eight,*	XCVIII.
99,	quatre-vingt-dix-neuf,	*ninety-nine,*	XCIX.
100,	cent,	*hundred,*	C.
200,	deux cents,	*two hundred,*	CC.
300,	trois cents,	*three hundred,*	CCC.
400,	quatre cents,	*four hundred,*	CCCC.
500,	cinq cents,	*five hundred,*	D.
600,	ſix cents,	*ſix hundred,*	DC.
700,	ſept cents,	*ſeven hundred,*	DCC.
800,	huit cents,	*eight hundred,*	DCCC.
900,	neuf cents,	*nine hundred,*	DCCCC.
1000,	mille,	*one thouſand,*	M.

Obſervations upon Cardinal Numbers.

1. When two or more numbers are joined together, the greateſt goes the firſt in French; thus we ſay, *vingt-cinq*, *vingt-ſix*, &c. and not *cinq & vingt*, five and twenty, *ſix & vingt*, ſix and twenty, as the Engliſh ſometimes do.

2. When ſeveral numbers meet together, we do not put in French any conjunction between them: thus we ſay, *cent vingt*, *cent trente*, and not *cent & vingt*, *cent & trente*, hundred and twenty, hundred and thirty.

3. The Engliſh word *thouſand*, is rendered in French by *mil*, with one *l* only, when it is uſed for the date of the year, and by *mille* with *lle*, in other circumſtances; thus we ſay, *l'an* mil *ſept cent quatre-vingt ſeize*, *les François remportèrent une victoire en Italie*, *et firent dix* mille *hommes priſonniers*.

4. When the words *cent*, and *mille*, are followed by a number, they are never preceded by the word *un* in French, as they are in Engliſh by the word *one*: thus we ſay, *cent cinquante*, for one hundred and fifty; *mil ſept cent*, for one thouſand and ſeven hundred; and not un *cent cinquante*, nor un *mil ſept cent*.

5. Theſe numbers, *vingt* and *cent*, are written with an *s* only when they are preceded by a number, and followed immediately by a ſubſtantive: thus we write, *quatre-vingts livres*, eighty pounds; *trois cents ſoldats*, three hundred ſoldiers, with an *s*; and *quatre-vingt dix livres*, ninety pounds; *trois cent vingt ſix ſoldats*, three hundred and twenty-ſix ſoldiers, without an *s*.

6. The word *million* always takes an *s*, when it is preceded by another number: as, *deux millions*, *dix millions*.

7. All numbers not mentioned in the preceding obſervations are always indeclinable.

SECTION THE FIFTH.

Of Ordinal Numbers.

Ordinal numbers denote the order and diſpoſition of things; they are as follow:

1er,	premier, *m.*	première, *f.*	1ſt	*firſt.*
2e,	ſecond, *m.*	ſeconde, *f.*	2d,	*ſecond.*

3e,	troiſième,	3d,	*third.*
4e,	quatrième,	4th,	*fourth.*
5e,	cinquième,	5th,	*fifth.*
6e,	ſixième,	6th,	*ſixth.*
7e,	ſeptième,	7th,	*ſeventh,*
8e,	huitième,	8th,	*eighth.*
9e,	neuvième,	9th,	*ninth.*
10e,	dixième,	10th,	*tenth.*
11e,	onzième,	11th,	*eleventh.*
12e,	douzième,	12th,	*twelfth.*
13e,	treizième,	13th,	*thirteenth.*
14e,	quatorzième,	14th,	*fourteenth.*
15e,	quinzième,	15th,	*fifteenth.*
16e,	ſeizième,	16th,	*ſixteenth.*
17e,	dix-ſeptième,	17th,	*ſeventeenth.*
18e,	dix-huitième,	18th,	*eighteenth.*
19e,	dix-neuvième,	19th,	*nineteenth.*
20e,	vingtième,	20th,	*twentieth.*
21e,	vingt-unième, &c.	21ſt,	*twenty-firſt.*

Obſervations upon Ordinal Numbers.

1. Except *le premier* and *le ſecond*, the *ordinal* numbers are formed from the *cardinal*, by changing *e* mute into *ième*, for thoſe which end with a vowel: as, *quatre*, *quatrième*; and by adding *ième* to thoſe which end in any other conſonant than *f*: as, *trois*, *dix*, cardinal; *troiſième*, *dixième*, ordinal.

2. Thoſe which end in *f*, change that final into *vième*: as, *neuf*, *dix-neuf*, cardinal; *neuvième*, *dix-neuvième*, ordinal.

3. The Engliſh always uſe the *ordinal* numbers, when they put a date to any thing; the French, on the contrary, uſe moſt commonly the *cardinal* in this caſe (except the two firſt, which are *ordinal*): thus we ſay, *le premier de Janvier*, *le ſecond de Février*, *le trois de Mars*, *le quatre d'Avril*, *le cinq de Mai*, &c.; *the firſt of January*, *the ſecond of February*, *the third of March*, *the fourth of April*, *the fifth of May*, &c.

4. The adverbs of *number* are formed from the *ordinal*, by adding *ment* to the final: as, *quatrième*, *dixième*, ordinal; *quatrièmement*, *dixièmement*, adverbs.

There are again two other ſorts of numbers, called *collective* and *diſtributive*: the *collective* denote a certain quantity of

things joined together; as, *une douzaine*, a dozen; *une cinquantaine*, fifty. The *distributive* express a part of the whole: as, *la moitié*, the half; *le tiers*, the third part; *le dixième*, the tenth part, &c.

CHAPTER IV.

Of Pronouns.

Pronouns are words used instead of nouns. They are of six sorts, called *personal*, *possessive*, *demonstrative*, *relative*, *interrogative* and *indeterminate*, of which as follows:

1. *Of Personal Pronouns.*

The personal pronouns *I*, *thou*, *he*, *she*, &c. represent some persons, or personified objects. As the same pronoun is expressed one way when it is *conjunctive* (that is, joined to a verb), and another when *disjunctive*, strict attention must be given to the following declensions, in which they are carefully distinguished *:

DECLENSION

OF THE CONJUNCTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

FIRST PERSON.

Singular.			Plural.		
N.	Je,	*I.*	N.	Nous,	*We.*
D.	Me,	*To me.*	D.	Nous,	*To us.*
Ac.	Me,	*Me.*	Ac.	Nous,	*Us.*

* *Under the word* conjunctive *are the personal pronouns which govern, or are governed by a verb; and under the disjunctive are the personal pronouns, to be used in all other circumstances.*

SECOND PERSON.

N.	Tu,	*Thou.*	N.	Vous,	*You.*
D.	Te,	*To thee.*	D.	Vous,	*To you.*
Ac.	Te,	*Thee.*	Ac.	Vous,	*You.*

THIRD PERSON, MASCULINE.

N.	Il,	*He.*	N.	Ils,	*They.*
D.	Lui,	*To him.*	D.	Leur,	*To them.*
Ac.	Le,	*Him.*	Ac.	Les,	*Them.*

THIRD PERSON, FEMININE.

N.	Elle,	*She.*	N.	Elles,	*They.*
D.	Lui,	*To her.*	D.	Leur,	*To them.*
Ac.	La,	*Her.*	Ac.	Les,	*Them.*

DECLENSION

OF THE DISJUNCTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

FIRST PERSON.

N.	Moi,	*I.*	N.	Nous,	*We.*
G.	De moi,	*Of me.*	G.	De nous,	*Of us.*
D.	A moi,	*To me.*	D.	A nous,	*To us.*
Ac.	Moi,	*Me.*	Ac.	Nous,	*Us.*

SECOND PERSON.

N.	Toi,	*Thou.*	N.	Vous,	*You.*
G.	De toi,	*Of thee.*	G.	De vous,	*Of you.*
D.	A toi,	*To thee.*	D.	A vous,	*To you.*
Ac.	Toi,	*Thee.*	Ac.	Vous,	*You.*

THIRD PERSON, MASCULINE.

N.	Lui,	*He.*	N.	Eux,	*They.*
G.	De lui,	*Of him.*	G.	D'eux,	*Of them.*
D.	A lui,	*To him.*	D.	A eux,	*To them.*
Ac.	Lui,	*Him,*	Ac.	Eux,	*Them.*

THIRD PERSON, FEMININE.

N.	Elle,	*She.*	N.	Elles,	*They.*
G.	D'elle,	*Of her.*	G.	D'elles,	*Of them.*
D.	A elle,	*To her.*	D.	A elles,	*To them.*
Ac.	Elle,	*Her.*	Ac.	Elles,	*Them.*

DECLENSION

OF IMPERSONAL PRONOUNS.

	Singular.		Plural.	
N.	Il, elle, *or* ce,	*it.*	Ils, elles, *or* ce,	*they.*
G.	En,	*of it.*	En,	*of them.*
D.	Lui, y,	*to it.*	Leur, y,	*to them.*
Ac.	Le, la,	*it.*	Les,	*them.*

N. B. The compound personal pronouns *moi-même*, myself; *toi-même*, thyself; *lui-même*, himself; *elle-même*, herself; *nous-mêmes*, ourselves; *vous-mêmes*, yourselves; *eux-mêmes*, themselves; take the preposition *de* in the genitive case, and *à* in the dative.

2. *Of Possessive Pronouns.*

The possessive pronouns denote possession. They are called *conjunctive possessive*, when they are joined to a noun, and *disjunctive possessive*, when not. They are declined as follows:

DECLENSION

OF CONJUNCTIVE POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

	Singular.		Plural.	
	m.	*f.*	*m.* & *f.*	
N. Ac.	mon,	ma,	mes.	*my.*
G.	de mon,	de ma,	de mes.	*of my.*
D.	à mon,	à ma,	à mes.	*to my.*

	Singular.		Plural.	
	m.	*f.*	*m* & *f.*	
N. Ac.	ton,	ta,	tes.	*thy.*
G.	de ton,	de ta,	de tes.	*of thy.*
D.	à ton,	à ta,	à tes.	*to thy.*

	Singular.		Plural.	
	m.	*f.*	*m.* & *f.*	
N. Ac.	ſon,	ſa,	ſes.	*his, her, its.*
G.	de ſon,	de ſa,	de ſes.	*of his, of her, of its.*
D.	à ſon,	à ſa,	à ſes.	*to his, to her, to its.*

	Singular.	Plural.	
	m. & *f.*	*m.* & *f.*	
N. Ac.	notre,	nos.	*our.*
G.	de notre,	de nos.	*of our.*
D.	à notre,	à nos.	*to our.*

	Singular.	Plural.	
	m. & *f.*	*m.* & *f.*	
N. Ac.	votre,	vos.	*your.*
G.	de votre,	de vos.	*of your.*
D.	à votre,	à vos.	*to your.*

	Singular.	Plural.	
	m. & *f.*	*m.* & *f.*	
N. Ac.	leur,	leurs.	*their.*
G.	de leur,	de leurs.	*of their.*
D.	à leur,	à leurs.	*to their.*

DECLENSION

OF DISJUNCTIVE POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

	Singular.		Plural.	
	m.	*f.*	*m.*	*f.*
N. Ac.	le mien,	la mienne,	les miens,	les miennes, *mine.*
G.	du mien,	de la mienne,	des miens,	des miennes, *of mine.*
D.	au mien,	à la mienne,	aux miens,	aux miennes, *to mine.*

	Singular.		Plural.		
	m.	*f.*	*m.*	*f.*	
N. Ac.	le tien,	la tienne,	les tiens,	les tiennes,	*thine.*
G.	du tien,	de la tienne,	des tiens,	des tiennes,	*of thine.*
D.	au tien,	à la tienne,	aux tiens,	aux tiennes,	*to thine.*

	Singular.		Plural.		
	m.	*f.*	*m.*	*f.*	
N. Ac.	le ſien,	la ſienne,	les ſiens,	les ſiennes,	*his, hers, its.*
G.	du ſien,	de la ſienne,	des ſiens,	des ſiennes,	*of his,* &c.
D.	au ſien,	à la ſienne,	aux ſiens,	aux ſiennes,	*to his,* &c.

	Singular.		Plural.	
	m.	*f.*	*m.* & *f.*	
N. Ac.	le nôtre,	la nôtre,	les nôtres,	*ours.*
G.	du nôtre,	de la nôtre,	des nôtres,	*of ours.*
D.	au nôtre,	à la nôtre,	aux nôtres,	*to ours.*

	Singular.		Plural.	
	m.	*f.*	*m.* & *f.*	
N. Ac.	le vôtre,	la vôtre,	les vôtres,	*yours.*
G.	du vôtre,	de la vôtre,	des vôtres,	*of yours.*
D.	au vôtre,	à la vôtre,	aux vôtres,	*to yours.*

	Singular.		Plural.	
	m.	*f.*	*m.* & *f.*	
N. Ac.	le leur,	la leur,	les leurs,	*theirs.*
G.	du leur,	de la leur,	des leurs,	*of theirs.*
D.	au leur,	à la leur,	aux leurs,	*to theirs.*

Obſervations upon theſe Pronouns.

1. Theſe pronouns agree in gender and number with the ſubſtantive which they precede, or to which they have reference.

2. The poſſeſſive conjunctive take the prepoſition *de* in the genitive caſe, and *à* in the dative. The disjunctive are pre-

ceded by *le, la, les,* in the nominative; by *du, de la, des,* in the genitive; and by *au, à la, aux,* in the dative.

3. *Leur* (conjunctive perſonal pronoun) *to them,* muſt not be confounded with *leur,* (poſſeſſive pronoun) *their.* The firſt never takes an *s,* but the ſecond takes one in the plural: as, *dites* leur *que* leurs *frères ſont arrivés;* tell them that their brothers are arrived.

4. *Notre* and *votre* conjunctive poſſeſſive are ſounded ſhort; *le nôtre, le vôtre* poſſeſſive disjunctive are ſounded long, and have a circumflex accent over ô: as, *notre pere eſt mort, le vôtre eſt en bonne ſanté;* our father is dead, yours is in good health.

3. *Of Demonſtrative Pronouns.*

Demonſtrative pronouns denote preciſely, and point out, as it were, to the eye, the noun which they precede, or to which they have reference. They are called *conjunctive demonſtrative* when they are joined to a ſubſtantive, and *disjunctive* when not.

DECLENSION
OF CONJUNCTIVE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

SINGULAR.

	m.		*f.*	
N. Ac.	ce,	cet*,	cette,	*this* or *that.*
G.	de ce,	de cet,	de cette,	*of this* or *of that.*
D.	à ce,	à cet,	à cette,	*to this* or *to that.*

PLURAL.

N. Ac.	ces,	*m.* & *f.*	*theſe* or *thoſe.*
G.	de ces,		*of theſe* or *of thoſe.*
D.	à ces,		*to theſe* or *to thoſe.*

* *This pronoun is uſed before a noun maſculine, which begins with a vowel or* h *mute.*

DECLENSION
OF DISJUNCTIVE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

	m.	*f.*	
N. Ac.	celui,	celle,	*this,*
G.	de celui,	de celle,	*of this.*
D.	à celui,	à celle,	*to this.*

SINGULAR.

	m.	*f.*	
N. Ac.	celui-cì,	celle-cì,	*this.*
G.	de celui-cì,	de celle-cì,	*of this.*
D.	à celui-cì,	à celle-cì,	*to this.*

PLURAL.

	m.	*f.*	
N. Ac.	ceux-cì,	celles-cì,	*theſe.*
G.	de ceux-cì,	de celles-cì,	*of theſe:*
D.	à ceux-cì,	à celles-cì,	*to theſe.*

SINGULAR.

	m.	*f.*	
N. Ac.	celui-là,	celle-là,	*that.*
G.	de celui-là,	de celle-là,	*of that.*
D.	à celui-là,	à celle-là,	*to that.*

PLURAL.

	m.	*f.*	
N. Ac.	ceux-là,	celles-là,	*thoſe.*
G.	de ceux-là,	de celles-là,	*of thoſe.*
D.	à ceux-là,	à celles-la,	*to thoſe.*

N. Ac.	ceci,	*this.*	cela,	*that.*
G.	de ceci,	*of this.*	de cela,	*of that.*
D.	à ceci,	*to this.*	à cela,	*to that.*

4. *Of Relative Pronouns.*

Though every pronoun has reference to a ſubſtantive, and might be, on that account, called *relative*; yet the following, *qui, que, dont, lequel, laquelle, leſquels, leſquelles,* eſpecially

bear that denomination, being more particularly related to their antecedent than any other. Of the relative pronouns, ſome have reference only to perſons or perſonified objects, and ſome to animals and things. They are declined as follows:

Pronoun relative to Perſons.

N.	qui,	*who.*
G.	de qui, *or* dont,	*of whom.*
D.	à qui,	*to whom.*
Ac.	qui, *or* que,	*whom.*

Pronouns relative to Animals and Things.

SINGULAR.

		m.	*f.*	
N.	qui, *or*	lequel,	laquelle,	*which.*
G.		duquel,	de laquelle, dont,	*of which.*
D.		auquel,	à laquelle,	*to which.*
Ac.	que, *or*	lequel,	laquelle,	*which.*

PLURAL.

		m.	*f.*	
N.	qui, *or*	leſquels,	leſquelles,	*which.*
G.		deſquels,	deſquelles, dont,	*of which.*
D.		auxquels,	auxquelles,	*to which.*
Ac.	que, *or*	leſquels,	leſquelles,	*which.*

5. *Of Interrogative Pronouns.*

Interrogative pronouns, are thoſe uſed to aſk a queſtion; viz. *who? which?* and *what?* expreſſed and declined in French as follows:

1. *Who?*

N.	qui?	*who?*
G.	de qui?	*of whom?*
D.	à qui?	*to whom?*
Ac.	qui?	*whom?*

2. *Which?*

	Singular.		Plural.		
	m.	*f.*	*m.*	*f.*	
N. Ac.	lequel,	laquelle,	leſquels,	leſquelles,	*which?*
G.	duquel,	de laquelle,	deſquels,	deſquelles,	*of which?*
D.	auquel,	à laquelle,	auxquels,	auxquelles,	*to which?*

3. *What?* before a Subſtantive.

	Singular.			Plural.			
	m.		*f.*	*m.*		*f.*	
N. Ac.	quel,		quelle,	quels		quelles,	*what?*
G.	de quel,	de	quelle,	de quels,	de	quelles,	*of what?*
D.	à quel,	à	quelle,	à quels,	à	quelles,	*to what?*

What? without a Subſtantive.

N. Ac.		quoi,	*what?*
G.	de	quoi,	*of what?*
D.	à	quoi,	*to what?*

6. *Of Indeterminate Pronouns.*

Indeterminate pronouns are ſo called, becauſe they expreſs a vague and indeterminate object; they are the ſixteen following:

1, on,	*oneſelf.*	9, quiconque,	*whoever.*
2, le même,	*the ſame.*	10, l'un l'autre,	*one another*
3, pluſieurs,	*many* or *ſeveral.*	11, l'un & l'autre,	*both.*
4, autres,	*others.*	12, l'un ou l'autre,	*either.*
5, quelqu'un,	*ſomebody.*	13, ni l'un ni l'autre,	*neither.*
6, chacun,	*every body.*	14, aucun, pas un,	*not one.*
7, tout,	*every thing.*	15, perſonne,	*nobody.*
8, tout ce qui,	*all that.*	16, rien,	*nothing.*

Obſerve, 1. *on* makes *de ſoy* in the genitive caſe, *à ſoy* in the dative, and *ſoi* in the accuſative.

2. *L'un l'autre* makes *l'un de l'autre* in the genitive, and *l'un à l'autre* in the dative.

3. All other pronouns take the preposition *de* in the genitive, and *à* in the dative.

CHAPTER V.

OF VERBS.

This chapter is divided into *eight* sections: *the first* speaks of the nature and species of verbs; *the second* treats of their different moods, tenses, numbers, and persons; *the third* gives the conjugations of the auxiliaries *avoir* and *être*, and contains a list of those conjugated with *to have* in English, and with *être* in French; *the fourth* comprehends the ten regular conjugations; *the fifth* explains how to conjugate the reflected verbs; *the sixth* gives a method to conjugate all verbs with negations, interrogations, and pronouns; *the seventh* has for object the irregular conjugations; and *the eighth* treats of the impersonal.

SECTION THE FIRST.

Of the Nature and Species of Verbs.

A verb, according to the Latin etymology, *verbum*, signifies *word*, to denote that the verb is the word by excellence, and the principal part of speech.

A verb expresses an action done or received, or denotes only the state of its nominative case; hence arise three distinct sorts of verbs, which are called,

1,	active,	*actif.*
2,	passive,	*passif.*
3,	neuter,	*neutre.*

The active verb expreſſes the action of its nominative upon ſome perſons or things; as, *Dieu punira les méchans*; God will puniſh the wicked. *Puniſh* is a verb active, which expreſſes the action of God over the wicked.

The paſſive verb expreſſes an action received by its nominative caſe; as, *les méchans ſeront punis de Dieu*; wicked people will be puniſhed by God.

The neuter verb expreſſes merely the ſtate of its nominative caſe; as, *je ſuis*, I am; *je dors*, I ſleep; *je languis*, I languiſh. It expreſſes alſo an action, but which remains in the ſubject which produces it; as, *je marche*, I walk; *j'agis*, I act.

Verbs are again ſubdivided into ſix claſſes, which are called,

Verbs,

1,	auxiliary,	*auxiliaires.*
2,	reflected,	*réfléchis.*
3,	perſonal,	*perſonnels.*
4,	imperſonal,	*impersonnels.*
5,	regular,	*réguliers.*
6,	irregular,	*irréguliers.*

1. *The auxiliary verbs* are theſe two, *avoir*, to have; and *être*, to be: they are called *auxiliaries*, becauſe they help to conjugate all other verbs in their compound tenſes.

2. *The reflected verbs* are thoſe which have for ſubject and object the ſame perſon or thing; as, *je me leve*, I riſe; *je m'habille*, I dreſs myſelf; *je me repents*, I repent.

3. *The perſonal verbs* are thoſe which are conjugated with three perſons in the ſingular number, and three in the plural, in all the tenſes of the indicative and ſubjunctive moods; as, *je parle, tu parles, il parle, nous parlons, vous parlez, ils parlent.*

4. *The impersonal verbs* are thoſe which are uſed only in the third perſon ſingular of each tenſe; as, *il pleut*, it rains; *il neige*, it ſnows; *il gele*, it freezes.

5. *The regular verbs* are thoſe which are conjugated in all their tenſes and perſons, as the verb of the ſame final in the infinitive, which is given for example in regular conjugations; thus, for inſtance, *chanter* and *danſer*, to ſing and to dance, are regular of the firſt conjugation, becauſe they are conjugated like *parler* in all their tenſes and perſons.

6. *The irregular verbs* are thoſe which deviate in ſome tenſes

or perſons, from the verb regular of the ſame conjugation which is given for example; thus, *aller* is irregular, becauſe it is not conjugated, like *parler*, though it has the ſame final in the infinitive mood.

SECTION THE SECOND.

Of Moods, Tenſes, Numbers, and Perſons of Verbs.

Verbs are neceſſarily ſubject, 1, *to moods*, whereby they expreſs in what manner a thing comes to paſs; 2, *to tenſes*, by the help of which they repreſent the thing ſpoken of as preſent, paſt, or future; 3, *to numbers* and *perſons*, that they may agree with their nominative caſe. It is this aſſemblage which is termed *to conjugate*; or rather, conjugation is nothing elſe than the art of varying the different moods, tenſes, numbers, and perſons of a verb.

1. OF MOODS.

Moods are the different manners of uſing a verb. There are four moods; the *infinitive*, the *indicative*, the *ſubjunctive*, and the *imperative*.

The infinitive mood, which is the root of a verb, and by which the conjugations are diſtinguiſhed from each other, expreſſes an action, but in an undeterminate manner, without ſpecifying any particular agent; as, *parler*, to ſpeak; *dormir*, to ſleep; *agir*, to act, &c.

The indicative mood ſhews directly and poſitively the different tenſes of a verb; it forms a ſenſe of itſelf independently of what precedes or follows; as, *je veux*, I am willing; *j'écris*, I am writing; *je parle*, I ſpeak.

The ſubjunctive mood denotes alſo different tenſes, but dependently on the verb or conjunction antecedent; as, *il faut que* nous ſoyons *modeſtes*, *quelque mérite* que nous ayons: if you take out *il faut que*, the reſt, *nous ſoyons modeſtes*, has not a complete ſenſe.

The imperative mood expreſſes the action of deſiring, commanding, exhorting, &c. as, *répondez moi*, anſwer me.

Tenez votre parole inviolablement,
Mais ne la donnez pas inconſidérément.

2. OF TENSES.

Tenſes are different terminations, which ſhew if what is expreſſed by a verb has reference to preſent, paſt, or future time. Their names are found in the following conjugations, and their uſe is fully explained in the Syntax, chapters 15, 16, and 17.

3. OF NUMBERS AND PERSONS.

There are two numbers in a verb, which are, the *ſingular* and *plural*; the ſingular is uſed when we ſpeak of one, as, *votre frère* eſt *mort*, your brother is dead; and the plural, when we ſpeak of more than one, as, *vos frères* ſont *morts*, your brothers are dead.

There are three perſons in each number; *the firſt* is uſed when we ſpeak of ourſelves, *the ſecond* when we ſpeak to another, and *the third* when we ſpeak of another.

SECTION THE THIRD.

Conjugation of the auxiliary avoir, *to have.*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent tenſe,	avoir,	*to have.*
Gerund,	ayant,	*having.*
Participle,	eu,	*had.*
Compound of the preſent,	avoir eu,	*to have had.*
Compound of the gerund,	ayant eu,	*having had.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

Singular.		Plural.	
1. J'ai *,	*I have,*	Nous avons,	*we have.*
2. tu as,	*thou haſt,*	vous avez,	*you have.*
3. il a,	*he has,*	ils ont,	*they have.*

IMPERFECT.

1. J'avois, † *I had,*	Nous avions, *we had.*
2. tu avois, *thou hadſt,*	vous aviez, *you had.*
3. il avoit, *he had,*	ils avoient, *they had.*

PRETERITE.

1. J'eus, *I had,*	Nous eûmes, *we had.*
2. tu eus, *thou hadſt,*	vous eûtes, *you had.*
3. il eut, *he had,*	ils eûrent, *they had.*

FUTURE.

1. J'aurai, *I ſhall* or *will*	} *have,*	Nous aurons, *we ſhall*	} *have.*
2. tu auras, *thou ſhalt*		vous aurez, *you ſhall*	
3. il aura, *he ſhall*		ils auront, *they ſhall*	

CONDITIONAL.

1. J'aurois, *I would*	} *have,*	Nous aurions, *we would*	} *have.*
2. tu aurois, *thou wouldeſt*		vous auriez, *you would*	
3. il auroit, *he would*		ils auroient, *they would*	

Compound of the preſent, J'ai eu, &c. *I have had.*
Compound of the imperfect, J'avois eu, &c. *I had had.*
Compound of the preterite, J'eus eu, &c. *I had had.*
Compound of the future, J'aurai eu, &c. *I ſhall have had.*
Compound of the conditional, J'aurois eu, &c. *I would have had.*

* *The figures* 1, 2, 3, *denote the firſt, ſecond, and third perſons.*

† *Many authors write,* j'avais, tu avais, il avait, &c. *and uſe* ai *inſtead of* oi *for the three perſons ſingular of the imperfect and conditional of* all *verbs; I do not follow that orthography, becauſe it is not adopted by the French academy.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

1. J'aie, *I may have,*	Nous ayons,	*we may have.*
2. tu aies, *thou mayeſt have,*	vous ayez,	*you may have.*
3. il ait, *he may have,*	ils aient,	*they may have.*

PRETERITE TENSE.

1. J'euſſe, *I might have,*	Nous euſſions,	*we might have.*
2. tu euſſes, *thou mighteſt,*	vous euſſiez,	*you might have.*
3. il eût, *he might have,*	ils euſſent,	*they might have.*
Compound of the preſent,	J'aie eu,	*I may have had.*
Compound of the preterite,	J'euſſe eu,	*I might have had.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

No firſt perſon,	Ayons,	*let us have.*
aies, *have thou,*	ayez,	*have ye.*
qu'il ait, *let him have,*	qu'ils aient,	*let him have.*

N. B. Though I have only put the firſt perſon of the compound tenſes, the pupil muſt repeat all the perſons by heart.

Conjugation of the auxiliary verb, être, *to be.*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe,	être,	*to be.*
Gerund,	étant,	*being.*
Participle,	été,	*been.*
Compound of the preſent,	avoir été,	*to have been.*
Compound of the Gerund,	ayant été,	*having been.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

Singular.	Plural.
1. Je ſuis, *I am,*	Nous ſommes, *we are.*
2. tu es, *thou art,*	vous êtes, *you are.*
3. il eſt, *he is,*	ils ſont, *they are.*

Imperfect.

1. J'étois, *I was,*	Nous étions, *we were.*
2. tu étois, *thou waſt,*	vous étiez, *you were.*
3. il étoit, *he was,*	ils étoient, *they were,*

Preterite.

1. Je fus, *I was,*	Nous fûmes, *we were.*
2. tu fus, *thou waſt,*	vous fûtes, *you were.*
3. il fut, *he was,*	ils fûrent, *they were.*

Future.

1. Je ſerai, *I ſhall* or *will be,*	Nous ſerons, *we ſhall* or *will be.*
2. tu ſeras, *thou ſhalt* or *wilt be,*	vous ſerez, *you ſhall* or *will be.*
3. il ſera, *he ſhall* or *will be,*	ils ſeront, *they ſhall* or *will be.*

Conditional.

1. Je ſerois, *I would be,*	Nous ſerions, *we would be.*
2. tu ſerois, *thou wouldeſt be,*	vous ſeriez, *you would be.*
3. il ſeroit, *he would be,*	ils ſeroient, *they would be.*
Compound of the preſent,	J'ai été, *I have been.*
Compound of the imperfect,	J'avois été, *I had been.*
Compound of the preterite,	J'eus été, *I had been.*
Compound of the future,	J'aurai été, *I ſhall have been.*
Compound of the conditional,	J'aurois été, *I would have been.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

1. Je ſois, *I may be,*	Nous ſoyons, *we may be.*
2. tu ſois, *thou mayeſt be,*	vous ſoyez, *you may be.*
3. il ſoit, *he may be,*	ils ſoient, *they may be.*

Preterite.

1. Je fuſſe, *I might be,*	Nous fuſſions, *we might be.*
2. tu fuſſes, *thou mighteſt be,*	vous fuſſiez, *you might be.*
3. il fût, *he might be,*	ils fuſſent, *they might be.*
Compound of the preſent,	J'aie été, *I may have been.*
Compound of the preterite,	J'euſſe été, *I might have been.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

No firſt perſon.	Soyons, *let us be.*
2. ſois, *be thou,*	ſoyez, *be ye.*
3. qu'il ſoit, *let him be,*	qu'ils ſoient, *let them be.*

Theſe two verbs, *avoir* and *être*, help to conjugate all others in their compound tenſes, and therefore muſt be learnt perfectly. All verbs conjugated with the verb *to be* in Engliſh, take *être* in French; but *all* thoſe conjugated with *to have* in Engliſh, do not take *avoir* in French; the following are excepted.

Verbs conjugated with to have *in Engliſh, and* être *in French.*

1. All reflected and reciprocal verbs, without exception, take, in their compound tenſes, the auxiliary *être* in French, and the auxiliary *to have* in Engliſh.

2. The ſixteen following are conjugated with *être* in French, and *to have* in Engliſh:

aller,	*to go.*	tomber,	*to fall.*
arriver,	*to arrive.*	venir,	*to come.*
déchoir,	*to decay.*	devenir,	*to become.*
décéder,	*to die.*	diſconvenir,	*to diſagree.*
entrer,	*to come in.*	intervenir,	*to intervene.*
mourir,	*to die.*	parvenir,	*to attain.*
naître,	*to be born.*	revenir,	*to come back.*
partir,	*to ſet out.*	ſurvenir,	*to happen.*

3. Theſe ſix, *accourir*, to run to; *accroître*, to increaſe; *apparoître*, to appear; *croître*, to grow; *diſparoître*, to diſappear; and *périr*, to periſh; which are always conjugated with the auxiliary *to have* in Engliſh, are indifferently conjugated in French with *avoir*, or *être*.

Verbs which take avoir *in one Signification, and* être *in another.*

Theſe ſix verbs, *accoucher, convenir, demeurer, deſcendre, monter,* and *paſſer,* take *avoir* or *être* in their compound tenſes, according to the following diſtinctions:

1. *Accoucher* takes *avoir,* when it means to deliver a woman; *accoucher* takes *être,* when it means to be delivered; as, *votre mère* eſt *accouchée, mon frère l'a accouchée;* your mother is brought to bed, my brother has delivered her.

2. *Convenir* takes *avoir,* when it means *to be convenient; convenir* takes *être* when it ſignifies *to agree;* as, *votre maiſon* auroit *convenu à mon père, je ſuis fâché que vous ne ſoyez pas convenu de prix;* your houſe would have ſuited my father, I am ſorry you have not agreed upon the terms.

3. *Demeurer* takes *avoir,* when it ſignifies *to live in; demeurer* takes *être,* when it ſignifies *to remain;* as, *j'ai démeuré à Londres,* I have lived in London; *il* eſt *demeuré inébranlable,* he has remained immoveable.

4. *Deſcendre* takes *avoir,* when it governs an accuſative caſe, and *être* when not; as, *il* a *deſcendu l'eſcalier,* he has gone down ſtairs; *il* eſt *deſcendu d'une bonne famille,* he is deſcended from a good family.

5. *Monter* takes *avoir,* when it governs the accuſative, and *être* when not; as, *j'ai monté la colline,* I have aſcended the hill; *je* ſuis *monté par dégré aux charges militaires,* I have aſcended by degrees to military employments.

6. *Paſſer* takes *avoir,* when it is followed by a noun or a pronoun, and *être* when not; as, *j'ai paſſé par la France,* I have paſſed through France; *cette mode* eſt *paſſée,* that faſhion is paſt.

SECTION THE FOURTH.

Of Regular Conjugations.

The reſpective conjugations are formed by the different terminations of verbs in their tenſes and perſons, and particularly in the infinitive mood; now, the infinitive of all our verbs end either in *ER, IR, OIR,* or *RE;* as, *parler, agir,*

recevoir, *faire*, which form four general conjugations; however, as the verbs which end in *IR* and *RE*, are conjugated differently in the ſame tenſes and perſons, I admit of ten *regular* conjugations; one in *ER*, three in *IR*, one in *OIR*, and five in *RE*, which will greatly diminiſh the number of the *irregular*, and conſequently facilitate the learning of verbs. They are as follow:

1 in *er*	parler, *to ſpeak.*		faire, *to do.*
	agir, *to act.*		craindre, *to fear.*
3 in *ir*	ſentir, *to ſmell.*	5 in *re*	connoître, *to know.*
	tenir, *to hold.*		inſtruire, *to inſtruct.*
1 in *oir*	recevoir, *to receive.*		vendre, *to ſell.*

Firſt Conjugation, Parler.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent tenſe,	parler,	*to ſpeak.*
Gerund,	parlant,	*ſpeaking.*
Participle,	parlé,	*ſpoken.*
Compound of the preſent,	avoir parlé,	*to have ſpoken.*
Compound of the gerund,	ayant parlé,	*having ſpoken.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

Singular.	Plural.
Je parle, *I ſpeak,*	Nous parlons, *we ſpeak.*
tu parles, *thou ſpeakeſt.*	vous parlez, *you ſpeak.*
il parle, *he ſpeaks,*	ils parlent, *they ſpeak.*

Imperfect.

Je parlois, *I did ſpeak.*	Nous parlions, *we did ſpeak.*
tu parlois, *thou didſt ſpeak,*	vous parliez, *you did ſpeak.*
il parloit, *he did ſpeak,*	ils parloient, *they did ſpeak.*

Preterite.

Je parlai, *I ſpoke,*	Nous parlâmes, *we ſpoke.*
tu parlas, *thou ſpokeſt,*	vous parlâtes, *you ſpoke.*
il parla, *he ſpoke,*	ils parlèrent, *they ſpoke.*

Future.

Je parlerai, *I ſhall ſpeak,* Nous parlerons, *we ſhall ſpeak*
tu parleras, *thou ſhalt ſpeak,* vous parlerez, *you ſhall ſpeak.*
il parlera, *he ſhall ſpeak,* ils parleront, *they ſhall ſpeak.*

Conditional.

Je parlerois, *I would ſpeak,* Nous parlerions, *we would ſpeak*
tu parlerois, *thou wouldeſt ſpeak,* vous parleriez, *you would ſpeak*
il parleroit, *he would ſpeak,* ils parleroient, *they would ſpeak*

Compound of the preſent, J'ai parlé, *I have ſpoken.*
Compound of the imperfect, J'avois parlé, *I had ſpoken.*
Compound of the preterite, J'eus parlé, *I had ſpoken.*
Compound of the future, J'aurai parlé, *I ſhall have ſpoken.*
Compound of the conditional, J'aurois parlé, *I would have ſpoken*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

Je parle, *I may ſpeak,* Nous parlions, *we may ſpeak.*
tu parles, *thou mayeſt ſpeak,* vous parliez, *you may ſpeak.*
il parle, *he may ſpeak,* ils parlent, *they may ſpeak.*

Preterite.

Je parlaſſe, *I might ſpeak,* Nous parlaſſions, *we might ſpeak*
tu parlaſſes, *thou mightſt, &c.* vous parlaſſiez, *you might ſpeak*
il parlât, *he might ſpeak,* ils parlaſſent, *they might ſpeak.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

No firſt perſon. Parlons, *let us ſpeak.*
parle, *ſpeak thou,* parlez, *ſpeak ye.*
qu'il parle, *let him ſpeak,* qu'ils parlent, *let them ſpeak.*

OBSERVATIONS.

1. *Did* is the mark of the imperfect in all verbs, *ſhall* or *will* of the future, *would, could,* or *ſhould* of the conditional, *may* of the preſent ſubjunctive, *might* of the preterite, and *let* of the imperative mood.

2. Moſt French verbs have the infinitive in *er,* and are conjugated the ſame as *parler,* except *aller, envoyer,* and *ren-*

voyer, which are irregular. *Puer* makes in the preſent indicative *je pus, tu pus, il put*; the reſt are regular.

3. Verbs which end in *ayer* or *oyer*, in the infinitive mood, take an *i* after *y* in the firſt and ſecond perſons plural of the imperfect of the indicative, and preſent of the ſubjunctive: as, *eſſayer, employer*, inf. *nous eſſayions, vous eſſayiez, nous employions, vous employiez*, imperfect indicative, and preſ. ſubj. See *Wailly*, page 81.

4. Verbs, which in the infinitive end in *ier*, are written with a *y* or double *ii* in the firſt and ſecond perſons plural of the imperfect of the indicative, and of the preſent of the ſubjunctive: as *prier, plier*, inf. *nous priions, nous pliions, vous priiez, vous pliiez*, imperfect indicative and pref. ſubj. or *nous pryons, vous pryez*. See *Wailly*, page 81.

5. We put an *e* between *g* and *a* or *o*, through the whole conjugation of verbs which end in *ger* in the infinitive mood. Thus we ſay, *juger, jugeant, je jugeois, nous jugeons*; *partager, je partageois*, &c. not *jugant, jugois*, as we ſay, *parlant, parlois*.

N. B. As the compound tenſes of all verbs, regular and irregular, are nothing elſe than the conjugation of the verbs *avoir* or *être* and the participle of the verb conjugated; the ſcholar knowing well the auxiliaries, knows how to conjugate the compound tenſes of all verbs; therefore we may diſpenſe with inſerting them in the following conjugations.

Second Conjugation, Agir.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent tenſe,	agir,	*to act.*
Gerund,	agiſſant,	*acting.*
Participle,	agi,	*acted.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

Singular.		Plural.	
J'agis,	*I act.*	Nous agiſſons,	*we act.*
tu agis,	*thou acteſt.*	vous agiſſez,	*you act.*
il agit,	*he acts.*	ils agiſſent,	*they act.*

Imperfect.

J'agiſſois,	*I did act.*	Nous agiſſions,	*we did act.*
tu agiſſois,	*thou didſt act.*	vous agiſſiez,	*you did act.*
il agiſſoit,	*he did act.*	ils agiſſoient,	*they did act.*

Preterite.

J'agis,	*I acted.*	Nous agîmes,	*we acted.*
tu agis,	*thou actedeſt.*	vous agîtes,	*you acted.*
il agit,	*he acted.*	ils agîrent,	*they acted.*

Future.

J'agirai,	*I ſhall* or *will act.*	Nous agirons,	*we ſhall act.*
tu agiras,	*thou ſhalt, &c. act.*	vous agirez,	*you ſhall act.*
il agira,	*he ſhall, &c. act.*	ils agiront,	*they ſhall act.*

Conditional.

J'agirois,	*I would, &c. act.*	Nous agirions,	*we would act.*
tu agirois,	*thou wouldeſt act.*	vous agiriez,	*you would act.*
il agiroit,	*he would act.*	ils agiroient,	*they would act.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

J'agiſſe,	*I may act.*	Nous agiſſions,	*we may act.*
tu agiſſes,	*thou mayeſt act.*	vous agiſſiez,	*you may act.*
il agiſſe,	*he may act.*	ils agiſſent,	*they may act.*

Preterite.

J'agiſſe,	*I might act.*	Nous agiſſions,	*we might act.*
tu agiſſes,	*thou mighteſt act.*	vous agiſſiez,	*you might act.*
il agît,	*he might act.*	ils agiſſent,	*they might act.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

No firſt perſon.		agiſſons,	*let us act.*
agis,	*act thou.*	agiſſez,	*act ye.*
qu'il agiſſe,	*let him act.*	qu'ils agiſſent,	*let them act.*

All verbs which end in *cir*, *dir*, *gir*, or *mir*, in the infinitive mood, are regular in French, and conjugated after *agir*.

Third Conjugation, Sentir.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe,	ſentir,	*to ſmell.*
Gerund,	ſentant,	*ſmelling.*
Participle,	ſenti,	*ſmelt.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

Singular.		Plural.	
Je ſents,	*I ſmell.*	Nous ſentons,	*we ſmell.*
tu ſents,	*thou ſmelleſt.*	vous ſentez,	*you ſmell.*
il ſent,	*he ſmells.*	ils ſentent,	*they ſmell.*

Imperfect.

Je ſentois,	*I did ſmell.*	Nous ſentions,	*we did ſmell.*
tu ſentois,	*thou didſt ſmell.*	vous ſentiez,	*you did ſmell.*
il ſentoit,	*he did ſmell.*	ils ſentoient,	*they did ſmell.*

Preterite.

Je ſentis,	*I ſmelt.*	Nous ſentîmes,	*we ſmelt.*
tu ſentis,	*thou ſmelteſt.*	vous ſentîtes,	*you ſmelt.*
il ſentit,	*he ſmelt.*	ils ſentîrent,	*they ſmelt.*

Future.

Je ſentirai,	*I ſhall ſmell.*	Nous ſentirons,	*we ſhall ſmell.*
tu ſentiras,	*thou ſhalt ſmell.*	vous ſentirez,	*you ſhall ſmell.*
il ſentira,	*he ſhall ſmell.*	ils ſentiront,	*they ſhall ſmell.*

Conditional.

Je ſentirois,	*I could ſmell.*	Nous ſentirions,	*we could ſmell.*
tu ſentirois,	*thou couldeſt ſmell.*	vous ſentiriez,	*you could ſmell.*
il ſentiroit,	*he could ſmell.*	ils ſentiroient,	*they could ſmell.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

Je ſente,	*I may ſmell.*	Nous ſentions,	*we may ſmell.*
tu ſentes,	*thou mayeſt ſmell.*	vous ſentiez,	*you may ſmell.*
il ſente,	*he may ſmell.*	ils ſentent,	*they may ſmell.*

Preterite.

Je ſentiſſe, *I might ſmell.* Nous ſentiſſions, *we might ſmell.*
tu ſentiſſes, *thou mightſt ſmell.* vous ſentiſſiez, *you might ſmell.*
il ſentît, *he might ſmell.* ils ſentiſſent, *they might ſmell.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

No firſt perſon. Sentons, *let us ſmell.*
ſents, *ſmell thou.* ſentez, *ſmell ye.*
qu'il ſente, *let him ſmell.* qu'ils ſentent *let them ſmell.*

N. B. All the verbs which end in *tir* in the infinitive, are regular, except *vêtir* and *revêtir*, and thoſe derived from them. *Dormir* and *ſervir* are alſo conjugated after *ſentir*, though they have not the infinitive in *tir*.

Fourth Conjugation, Tenir.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent tenſe,	tenir,	*to hold.*
Gerund,	tenant,	*holding.*
Participle	tenu,	*held.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

Singular.		Plural.	
Je tiens	*I hold.*	Nous tenons,	*we hold.*
tu tiens,	*thou holdeſt.*	vous tenez,	*you hold.*
il tient,	*he holds.*	ils tiennent,	*they hold.*

Imperfect.

Je tenois, *I did hold.* Nous tenions, *we did hold.*
tu tenois, *thou didſt hold.* vous teniez, *you did hold.*
il tenoit, *he did hold.* ils tenoient, *they did hold.*

Preterite.

Je tins,	*I held.*	Nous tînmes,	*we held.*
tu tins,	*thou heldeſt.*	vous tîntes,	*you held.*
il tint,	*he held.*	ils tînrent,	*they held.*

Future.

Je tiendrai,	*I ſhall hold.*	Nous tiendrons,	*we ſhall hold.*
tu tiendras,	*thou ſhalt hold.*	vous tiendrez,	*you ſhall hold.*
il tiendra,	*he ſhall hold.*	ils tiendront,	*they ſhall hold.*

Conditional.

Je tiendrois,	*I would hold.*	Nous tiendrions,	*we would hold.*
tu tiendrois,	*thou wouldeſt hold.*	vous tiendriez,	*you would hold.*
il tiendroit,	*he would hold.*	ils tiendroient,	*they would hold.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

Je tienne,	*I may hold.*	Nous tenions,	*we may hold.*
tu tiennes,	*thou mayeſt hold.*	vous teniez,	*you may hold.*
il tienne,	*he may hold.*	ils tiennent,	*they may hold.*

Preterite.

Je tinſſe,	*I might hold.*	Nous tinſſions,	*we might hold.*
tu tinſſes,	*thou mighteſt hold.*	vous tinſſiez,	*you might hold.*
il tînt,	*he might hold.*	ils tinſſent,	*they might hold.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

No firſt perſon.	tenons, *let us hold.*
tiens, *hold thou.*	tenez, *hold ye.*
qu'il tienne, *let him hold.*	qu'ils tiennent, *let them hold.*

N. B. All the verbs which end in *enir*, are regular, and conjugated after *tenir* in all their tenſes and perſons, except *benir* to bleſs, which is conjugated on *agir*.

Fifth Conjugation, Recevoir.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent tenſe,	recevoir,	*to receive.*
Gerund,	recevant,	*receiving.*
Participle.	reçu,	*received.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

Singular.	Plural.
Je reçois, *I receive.*	Nous recevons, *we receive.*
tu reçois, *thou receiveſt,*	vous recevez, *you receive.*
il reçoit, *he receives.*	ils reçoivent, *they receive.*

Imperfect.

Je recevois, *I did receive.*	Nous recevions, *we did receive.*
tu recevois, *thou didſt receive.*	vous receviez, *you did receive.*
il recevoit, *he did receive.*	ils recevoient, *they did receive.*

Preterite.

Je reçus, *I received.*	Nous reçûmes, *we received.*
tu reçus, *thou receivedſt.*	vous reçûtes, *you received.*
il reçut, *he received.*	ils reçûrent, *they received.*

Future.

Je recevrai, *I ſhall receive.*	Nous recevrons, *we ſhall rece.*
tu recevras, *thou ſhalt receive.*	vous recevrez, *you ſhall receiv.*
il recevra, *he ſhall receive.*	ils recevront, *they ſhall receiv.*

Conditional.

Je recevrois, *I would receive.*	Nous recevrions, *we would re.*
tu recevrois, *thou wouldeſt—*	vous recevriez, *you would recei.*
il recevroit, *he would receive.*	ils recevroient, *they would rec.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

Je reçoive, *I may receive,*	Nous recevions, *we may.*
tu reçoives, *thou mayeſt receive,*	vous receviez, *you may.*
il reçoive, *he may receive,*	ils reçoivent, *they may.*

Preterite.

Je reçuſſe, *I might receive,*	Nous reçuſſions, *we might.*
tu reçuſſes, *thou mighteſt receive,*	vous reçuſſiez, *you might.*
il reçût, *he might receive,*	ils reçuſſent, *they might.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

No firſt perſon.	Recevons, *let us receive.*
reçois, *receive thou,*	recevez, *receive ye.*
qu'il reçoive, *let him receive,*	qu'ils reçoivent, *let them,* &c.

N. B. All the verbs which end in *evoir* in the infinitive mood are regular, and conjugated after *recevoir*; and all thoſe which end in *oir*, not preceded by *ev*, are irregular: ſuch are *pouvoir, ſavoir, vouloir*, &c.

Sixth Conjugation, Faire.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent tenſe,	faire,	*to do.*
Gerund,	feſant *,	*doing.*
Participle,	fait,	*done.*

INDICATIVE MOOD,

Preſent Tenſe.

Singular.		Plural.	
Je fais,	*I do,*	Nous feſons,	*we do.*
tu fais,	*thou doeſt,*	vous faites,	*you do.*
il fait,	*he does,*	ils font,	*they do.*

* *We alſo write a* faiſant, je faiſois, tu faiſois, il faiſoit, &c.

Imperfect.

Je ſeſois,	*I did,*	Nous ſeſions,	*we did.*
tu ſeſois,	*thou didſt,*	vous ſeſiez,	*you did.*
il ſeſoit,	*he did,*	ils ſeſoient,	*they did.*

Preterite.

Je fis,	*I did,*	Nous fîmes,	*we did.*
tu fis,	*thou didſt,*	vous fîtes,	*you did.*
il fit,	*he did,*	ils firent,	*they did.*

Future.

Je ferai, *I ſhall do,*	Nous ferons, *we ſhall do.*
tu feras, *thou ſhalt do,*	vous ferez, *you ſhall do.*
il fera, *he ſhall do,*	ils feront, *they ſhall do.*

Conditional.

Je ferois, *I would do,*	Nous ferions, *we would do.*
tu ferois, *thou wouldeſt do,*	vous feriez, *you would do.*
il feroit, *he would do,*	ils feroient, *they would do.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent Teuſe.

Je faſſe, *I may do,*	Nous faſſions, *we may do.*
tu faſſes, *thou mayeſt do,*	vous faſſiez, *you may do.*
il faſſe, *he may do,*	ils faſſent, *they may do.*

Preterite.

Je fiſſe, *I might do,*	Nous fiſſions, *we might do.*
tu fiſſes, *thou mightſt do,*	vous fiſſiez, *you might do.*
il fît, *he might do,*	ils fiſſent, *they might do.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

	No firſt perſon.	ſeſons,	*let us do.*
fais,	*do thou;*	faites,	*do ye.*
qu'il faſſe,	*let him do,*	qu'ils faſſent,	*let them do.*

N. B. All the compounds of *faire* are conjugated in the ſame manner, but all others which end in *aire* in the infinitive, ſuch as *plaire*, *traire*, &c. are irregular.

Seventh Conjugation, Craindre.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent tenſe,	craindre,	*to fear.*
Gerund,	craignant,	*fearing.*
Participle,	craint,	*feared.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

Singular.		Plural.	
Je crains,	*I fear*,	Nous craignons,	*we fear.*
tu crains,	*thou feareſt*,	vous craignez,	*you fear.*
il craint,	*he fears*,	ils craignent,	*they fear.*

Imperfect.

Je craignois,	*I did fear*,	Nous craignions, *we did fear.*
tu craignois,	*thou didſt fear*,	vous craigniez, *you did fear.*
il craignoit,	*he did fear*,	ils craignoient, *they did fear.*

Preterite.

Je craignis,	*I feared*,	Nous craignîmes, *we feared.*
tu craignis,	*thou fearedſt*,	vous craignîtes, *you feared.*
il craignit,	*he feared*,	ils craignîrent, *they feared.*

Future.

Je craindrai,	*I ſhall fear*,	Nous craindrons, *we ſhall fear.*
tu craindras,	*thou ſhalt fear*,	vous craindrez, *you ſhall fear.*
il craindra,	*he ſhall fear*,	ils craindront, *they ſhall fear.*

Conditional.

Je craindrois,	*I would fear*,	Nous craindrions, *we would.*
tu craindrois,	*thou wouldeſt fear*,	vous craindriez, *you would.*
il craindroit,	*he would fear*,	ils craindroient, *they would.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

Je craigne, *I may fear,*	Nous craignions, *we may,* &c.
tu craignes, *thou mayeſt fear,*	vous craigniez, *you may,* &c.
il craigne, *he may fear,*	ils craignent, *they may,* &c.

Preterite.

Je craigniſſe, *I might fear,*	Nous craigniſſions, *we might.*
tu craigniſſes, *thou might fear,*	vous craigniſſiez, *you might.*
il craignît, *he might fear,*	ils craigniſſent, *they might.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

No firſt perſon.	craignons, *let us fear.*
crains, *fear thou,*	craignez, *fear ye.*
qu'il craigne, *let him fear,*	qu'ils craignent, *let them fear.*

N. B. All the verbs which end in the infinitive, in *aindre*, *eindre*, or *oindre*, are regular, and conjugated on *craindre*.

Eighth Conjugation, Connoître.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent tenſe,	connoître,	*to know.*
Gerund,	connoiſſant,	*knowing.*
Participle,	connu,	*known.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

Singular.	Plural.
Je connois, *I know,*	Nous connoiſſons, *we know.*
tu connois, *thou knoweſt,*	vous connoiſſez, *you know.*
il connoit, *he knows,*	ils connoiſſent, *they know.*

Imperfect.

Je connoiſſois, *I did know,* Nous connoiſſions, *we did know.*
tu connoiſſois, *thou didſt know,* vous connoiſſiez, *you did know.*
il connoiſſoit, *he did know,* ils connoiſſoient, *they did know.*

Preterite.

Je connus, *I knew,* Nous connûmes, *we knew.*
tu connus, *thou knewſt,* vous connûtes, *you knew.*
il connut, *he knew,* ils connûrent, *they knew.*

Future.

Je connoîtrai, *I ſhall know,* Nous connoîtrons, *we ſhall,* &c.
tu connoîtras, *thou ſhalt,* &c. vous connoîtrez, *you ſhall know.*
il connoîtra, *he ſhall know,* ils connoîtront, *they ſhall know.*

Conditional.

Je connoîtrois, *I ſhould know,* Nous connoîtrions, *we ſhould*—
tu connoîtrois, *thou ſhouldeſt,* vous connoîtriez, *you ſhould,* &c.
il connoîtroit, *he ſhould know,* ils connoîtroient, *they ſhould.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

Je connoiſſe, *I may know,* Nous connoiſſions, *we may*—
tu connoiſſes, *thou mayeſt,* vous connoiſſiez, *you may know.*
il connoiſſe, *he may,* ils connoiſſent, *they may know.*

Preterite.

Je connuſſe, *I might,* Nous connûſſions, *we might*—
tu connuſſes, *thou mighteſt,* vous connûſſiez, *you might know.*
il connût, *he might know,* ils connûſſent, *they might know.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

No first person.	Connoiſſons, *let us know.*
connois, *know thou,*	connoiſſez, *know ye.*
qu'il connoiſſe, *let him know,*	qu'ils connoiſſent, *let them know.*

N. B. All verbs which end in *oître* in the preſent infinitive, are regular and conjugated on *connoître,*

Ninth Conjugation, Inſtruire.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent tenſe,	inſtruire,	*to inſtruct.*
Gerund,	inſtruiſant,	*inſtructing.*
Participle,	inſtruit,	*inſtructed.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

Singular.	Plural.
J'inſtruis, *I inſtruct,*	Nous inſtruiſons, *we inſtruct.*
tu inſtruis, *thou inſtructeſt,*	vous inſtruiſez, *you inſtruct.*
il inſtruit, *he inſtructs,*	ils inſtruiſent, *they inſtruct.*

Imperfect.

J'inſtruiſois, *I did inſtruct,*	Nous inſtruiſions, *we did inſt.*
tu inſtruiſois, *thou didſt inſtruct,*	vous inſtruiſiez, *you did inſtruct.*
il inſtruiſoit, *he did inſtruct,*	ils inſtruiſoient, *they did inſtruct.*

Preterite.

J'inſtruiſis, *I inſtructed.*	Nous inſtruiſîmes, *we inſtructed*
tu inſtruiſis, *thou inſtructedſt.*	vous inſtruiſîtes, *you inſtructed.*
il inſtruiſit, *he inſtructed.*	ils inſtruiſirent, *they inſtructed.*

Future.

J'inſtruirai, *I will inſtruct.*	Nous inſtruirons, *we will,* &c.
tu inſtruiras, *thou wilt inſtruct.*	vous inſtruirez, *you will inſtruct*
il inſtruira, *he will inſtruct.*	ils inſtruiront, *they will inſtruct.*

Conditional.

J'inſtruirois, *I would*, &c.
tu inſtruirois, *thou wouldeſt*,
il inſtruiroit, *he would*,
Nous inſtruirions, *we would*, &c.
vous inſtruiriez, *you would*, &c.
ils inſtruiroient, *they would*, &c.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

J'inſtruiſe, *I may inſtruct*,
tu inſtruiſes, *thou mayeſt*,
il inſtruiſe, *he may inſtruct*,
Nous inſtruiſions, *we may inſt.*
vous inſtruiſiez, *you may inſtruct.*
ils inſtruiſent, *they may inſtruct.*

Preterite.

J'inſtruiſiſſe, *I might inſtruct*,
tu inſtruiſiſſes, *thou mighteſt*,
il inſtruiſit, *he might inſtruct*,
Nous inſtruiſiſſions, *we might.*
vous inſtruiſiſſiez, *you might inſt.*
ils inſtruiſiſſent, *they might inſt.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

No firſt perſon,
inſtruis, *inſtruct thou*,
qu'il inſtruiſe, *let him inſtruct*,
Inſtruiſons, *let us inſtruct.*
inſtruiſez, *inſtruct ye.*
qu'ils inſtruiſent, *let them inſt.*

All verbs of good uſe which end in *uire* in the infinitive mood are regular, and conjugated on *inſtruire*; except *luire*, to ſhine; *réluire*, to glitter; and *nuire*, to hurt; which make in the participle, *lui*, *réluí*, and *nuí*: their other tenſes are regular.

Tenth Conjugation, Vendre.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent tenſe,	vendre,	*to ſell.*
Gerund,	vendant,	*ſelling.*
Participle,	vendu,	*ſold.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

Singular.	Plural.
Je vends, *I sell,*	Nous vendons, *we sell.*
tu vends, *thou sellest,*	vous vendez, *you sell.*
il vend, *he sells,*	ils vendent, *they sell.*

Imperfect.

Je vendois, *I did sell,*	Nous vendions, *we did sell.*
tu vendois, *thou did sell,*	vous vendiez, *you did sell.*
il vendoit, *he did sell,*	ils vendoient, *they did sell.*

Preterite.

Je vendis, *I sold,*	Nous vendîmes, *we sold.*
tu vendis, *thou soldest,*	vous vendîtes, *you sold.*
il vendit, *he sold,*	ils vendirent, *they sold.*

Future.

Je vendrai, *I shall sell,*	Nous vendrons, *we shall.*
tu vendras, *thou shalt sell,*	vous vendrez, *you shall sell.*
il vendra, *he shall sell,*	ils vendront, *they shall sell.*

Conditional.

Je vendrois, *I would sell,*	Nous vendrions, *we would sell.*
tu vendrois, *thou wouldest sell,*	vous vendriez, *you would sell.*
il vendroit, *he would sell,*	ils vendroient, *they would sell.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

Je vende, *I may sell,*	Nous vendions, *we may sell.*
tu vendes, *thou mayest sell,*	vous vendiez, *you may sell.*
il vende, *he may sell,*	ils vendent, *they may sell.*

Preterite.

Je vendisse, *I might sell,*	Nous vendissions, *we might sell.*
tu vendisses, *thou mightest sell,*	vous vendissiez, *you might sell.*
il vendît, *he might sell,*	ils vendissent, *they might sell.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

No first person.	vendons, *let us sell.*
vends, *sell thou,*	vendez, *sell ye.*
qu'il vende, *let him sell,*	qu'ils vendent, *let them sell.*

N. B. All verbs ending in *attre, endre,* or *ondre,* are regular, and conjugated on *vendre,* except *prendre,* to take, and its compounds, which are irregular.

SECTION THE FIFTH.

Conjugation of a Reflected Verb.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present tense,	se lever,	*to rise.*
Gerund,	se levant,	*rising.*
Participle,	levé,	*risen.*
Compound of the present,	s'être levé,	*to have risen.*
Compound of the gerund,	s'étant levé,	*having risen.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

Singular.	Plural.
Je me leve, *I rise,*	Nous nous levons, *we rise.*
tu te leve, *thou risest,*	vous vous levez, *you rise.*
il se leve, *he rises,*	ils se levent, *they rise.*

Imperfect.

Je me levois, *I did rise,*	Nous nous levions, *we did rise.*
tu te levois, *thou didst rise,*	vous vous leviez, *you did rise.*
il se levoit, *he did rise,*	ils se levoient, *they did rise.*

Preterite.

Je me levai, *I rose,*	Nous nous levâmes, *we rose.*
tu te levas, *thou didst rise,*	vous vous levâtes, *you rose.*
il se leva, *he rose,*	ils se levêrent, *they rose.*

Future.

Je me leverai, *I ſhall riſe,*
tu te leveras, *thou ſhalt riſe,*
il ſe levera, *he ſhall riſe,*
Nous nous leverons, *we ſhall riſe*
vous vous leverez, *you ſhall riſe*
ils ſe leveront, *they ſhall riſe.*

Conditional.

Je me leverois, *I would riſe,*
tu te leverois, *thou wouldeſt,*
il ſe leveroit, *he would riſe,*
Nous nous leverions, *we would.*
vous vous leveriez, *you would.*
ils ſe leveroient, *they would.*

COMPOUND TENSES.

Compound of the Preſent.

Je me ſuis levé, *I have riſen,*
tu t'es levé, *thou haſt,*
il s'eſt levé, *he has riſen,*
Nous nous ſommes levés, *we,* &c
vous vous êtes levés, *you have.*
ils ſe ſont levés, *they have.*

Compound of the Imperfect.

Je m'étois levé, *I had riſen,*
tu t'étois levé, *thou haſt,*
il s'étoit levé, *he had,*
Nous nous étions levés, *we had.*
vous vous étiez levés, *you had.*
ils s'étoient levés, *they had.*

Compound of the Preterite.

Je me fus levé, *I had riſen,*
tu te fus levé, *thou haſt riſen,*
il ſe fut levé, *he had riſen,*
Nous nous fûmes levés, *we had*
vous vous fûtes levés, *you had.*
ils ſe fûrent levés, *they had riſen*

Compound of the Future.

Je me ſerai levé,
I ſhall have riſen.
tu te ſeras levé,
thou ſhalt have riſen.
il ſe ſera levé,
he ſhall have riſen.
Nous nous ſerons levés,
we ſhall have riſen.
vous vous ſerez levés,
you ſhall have riſen.
ils ſe ſeront levés,
they ſhall have riſen.

Compound of the Conditional.

Je me ſerois levé,
I would have riſen.
tu te ſerois levé,
thou wouldeſt have riſen.
il ſe ſeroit levé,
he would have riſen.
Nous nous ſerions levés,
we would have riſen.
vous vous ſeriez levés,
you would have riſen.
ils ſe ſeroient levés,
they would have riſen.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent Tenſe.

Singular.	Plural.
Je me leve, *I may riſe,*	Nous nous levions, *we may riſe*
tu te leves, *thou mayeſt riſe,*	vous vous leviez, *you may riſe.*
il ſe leve, *he may riſe,*	ils ſe levent, *they may riſe.*

Preterite.

Je me levaſſe, *I might riſe,*	Nous nous levaſſions, *we might.*
tu te levaſſes, *thou mightſt,*	vous vous levaſſiez, *you might.*
il ſe levât, *he might riſe,*	ils ſe levaſſent, *they might riſe.*

COMPOUND TENSES.

Compound of the Preſent.

Je me ſois levé,	Nous nous ſoyons levés,
I may have riſen.	*we may have riſen.*
tu te ſois levé,	vous vous ſoyez levés,
thou mayeſt have riſen.	*you may have riſen.*
il ſe ſoit levé,	ils ſe ſoient levés,
he may have riſen.	*they may have riſen.*

Compound of the Preterite.

Je me fuſſe levé,	Nous nous fuſſions levés,
I might have riſen.	*we might have riſen.*
tu te fuſſes levé,	vous vous fuſſiez levés,
thou mightſt have riſen.	*you might have riſen.*
il ſe fût levé,	ils ſe fuſſent levés,
he might have riſen.	*they might have riſen.*

Imperative.

No firſt perſon.	levons-nous, *let us riſe.*
leve-toi, *riſe thou,*	levez-vous, *riſe you.*
qu'il ſe leve, *let him riſe,*	qu'ils ſe levent, *let them riſe.*

OBSERVATIONS.

1. All reflected verbs are conjugated with the auxiliary *être* in French, and *to have* in Engliſh, in their compound tenſes.

2. They are alſo conjugated with two pronouns relative to the ſame object: *je me* is uſed for the firſt perſon of the ſingular number; *tu te*, for the ſecond; *il*, or *elle ſe*, for the third; *nous nous*, for the firſt of the plural number; *vous vous*, for the ſecond; *ils*, or *elles ſe*, for the third, as before.

3. Moſt paſſive verbs, which have an inanimate object for their nominative caſe, are reflected in French; as, *les mauvaiſes nouvelles* ſe repandent *plus promptement que les bonnes*, bad news is ſooner ſpread about than good.

4. The verbs which are followed in Engliſh by the pronouns *myſelf*, *thyſelf*, *himſelf*, &c. anſwer exactly to the French reflected. The following have no pronouns in Engliſh, and, as they cannot be eaſily diſtinguiſhed, muſt be learnt by heart:

VERBS REFLECTED IN FRENCH.

s'abonner,	*to compound.*	s'emparer,	*to ſeize upon.*
s'abſtenir,	*to abſtain.*	s'empreſſer,	*to be eager.*
s'accorder,	*to agree.*	s'endormir,	*to fall aſleep.*
s'accouder,	*to lean upon.*	s'enfuir,	*to run away.*
s'aſſeoir,	*to ſit down.*	s'enhardir,	*to grow bold.*
s'attacher,	*to ſtick.*	s'enracíner,	*to take root.*
ſe baiſſer,	*to ſtoop.*	s'enrhumer,	*to catch cold.*
ſe cantonner,	*to canton.*	s'enrichir,	*to grow rich.*
ſe baigner,	*to bathe.*	s'entretenir,	*to diſcourſe with*
ſe coucher,	*to go to bed.*	s'envoler,	*to fly away.*
ſe débattre,	*to ſtruggle.*	s'épanouir,	*to blow.*
ſe déborder,	*to flow over.*	s'eſquiver,	*to ſteal away.*
ſe dédire,	*to retract.*	s'étonner,	*to wonder.*
ſe défier,	*to diſtruſt.*	s'évanouir,	*to faint away.*
ſe dépêcher,	*to make haſte.*	s'évaporer,	*to evaporate.*
ſe démettre,	*to reſign.*	s'évertuer,	*to ſtrive.*
ſe déſiſter,	*to give over.*	ſe farder,	*to paint.*
s'élancer,	*to leap upon.*	ſe fier,	*to truſt.*
s'en aller,	*to go away.*	ſe figurer,	*to fancy.*

ſe flétrir,	*to fade away.*	ſe mutiner,	*to mutiny.*
ſe fondre,	*to melt.*	ſe piquer,	*to pretend to.*
ſe formaliſer,	*to find fault.*	ſe plaindre,	*to complain.*
ſe gliſſer,	*to creep in.*	ſe promener,	*to walk.*
ſe hâter,	*to make haſte.*	ſe réjouir,	*to rejoice.*
s'imaginer,	*to fancy.*	ſe repentir,	*to repent.*
s'ingérer,	*to intermeddle.*	ſe repoſer,	*to reſt.*
s'inſinuer,	*to ſteal in.*	ſe reſſouvenir,	*to remember.*
ſe lever,	*to riſe.*	ſe révolter,	*to rebel.*
ſe liquéfier,	*to liquefy.*	ſe ſaiſir,	*to ſeize upon.*
ſe marier,	*to marry.*	ſe ſoumettre,	*to ſubmit.*
ſe méfier,	*to diſtruſt.*	ſe ſouvenir,	*to remember.*
ſe méprendre,	*to miſtake.*	ſe vanter,	*to boaſt.*
ſe moquer,	*to laugh at.*		

SECTION THE SIXTH.

Several Manners of Conjugating a Verb.

1. WITH NEGATION. Infinit. preſent: *Ne pas donner*, not to give; *ne donnant pas*, not giving.

Ind. preſ. *Je ne donne pas*, I do not give; *tu ne donnes pas*, thou doſt not give; *il ne donne pas*, he does not give; *nous ne donnons pas*, we do not give; *vous ne donnez pas*, you do not give; *ils ne donnent pas*, they do not give: and ſo on for all the other tenſes of the indicative and ſubjunctive moods.

Compound tenſes: *Je n'ai pas donné*, I have not given; *tu n'as pas donné*, thou haſt not given; *il n'a pas donné*, he has not given, &c. and ſo on for all compound tenſes and perſons.

2. WITH INTERROGATION. Imperfect of the indicative: *Puniſſois-je*, did I puniſh? *puniſſois-tu*, didſt thou puniſh? *puniſſoit-il*, did he puniſh? *puniſſions-nous*, did we puniſh? *puniſſiez-vous*, did you puniſh? *puniſſoient-ils*, did they puniſh?

Compound tenſes: *Ai-je puni*, have I puniſhed? *as-tu puni*, haſt thou puniſhed? *a-t-il puni*, has he puniſhed? and ſo on for other tenſes.

3. WITH NEGATION AND INTERROGATION. Preterite of the indicative: *Ne marchai-je pas*, did I not walk? *ne marchas-tu pas*, didſt thou not walk? *ne marcha-t-il pas*, did he not walk? *ne marchâmes-nous pas*, did we not walk? *ne marchâtes-vous pas*, did you not walk? *ne marchèrent-ils pas*, did they not walk?

Compound tenſes: *N'ai-je pas marché*, have I not walked? *n'as-tu pas marché*, haſt thou not walked? *n'a-t-il pas marché*, has he not walked? and ſo on for all other perſons.

4. WITH PRONOUNS. Future: *Je les vendrai*, I will ſell them; *tu les vendras*, thou wilt ſell them; *il les vendra*, he will ſell them; *nous les vendrons*, we will ſell them; *vous les vendrez*, you will ſell them; *ils les vendront*, they will ſell them.

Compound tenſes: *Je les ai vendu*, I have ſold them; *tu les as vendu*, thou haſt ſold them; *il les a vendu*, he has ſold them, &c.

5. WITH NEGATION AND PRONOUNS. Conditional: *Je ne le connoîtrois pas*, I ſhould not know him; *tu ne le connoîtrois pas*, thou ſhouldſt not know him; *il ne le connoîtroit pas*, he ſhould not know him; *nous ne le connoîtrions pas*, we ſhould not know him; *vous ne le connoîtriez pas*, you ſhould not know him; *ils ne le connoîtroient pas*, they ſhould not know him.

Compound tenſes: *Je ne l'ai pas connu*, I have not known him; *tu ne l'as pas connu*, thou haſt not known him; *il ne l'a pas connu*, he has not known him, &c.

6. WITH INTERROGATION AND PRONOUNS. Future indicative: *Les verrai-je*, ſhall I ſee them? *les verras-tu*, ſhalt thou ſee them? *les verra-t-il*, ſhall he ſee them? *les verrons-nous*, ſhall we ſee them? *les verrez-vous*, ſhall you ſee them? *les verront-ils*, ſhall they ſee them?

Compound tenſes: *Les ai-je vu*, have I ſeen them? *les as tu vu*, haſt thou ſeen them? *les a-t-il vu*, has he ſeen them?

This method of conjugating verbs is very uſeful for underſtanding the rules of the ſyntax; therefore I recommend it, particularly to children.

SECTION THE SEVENTH.

Conjugation of all the Irregular Verbs.

I. ABSOUDRE, *to abſolve**.

Inf. Abſoudre, *to abſolve.* *Part.* abſous, *abſolved.*

	Singular.			Plural.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
Preſ.	J'abſou	-s,	s, t;	abſolv	-ons,	ez, ent.
Imp.	J'abſolv	-ois,	ois, oit;	abſolv	-ions,	iez, oient.
Fut.	J'abſoud	-rai,	ras, ra;	abſoud	-rons,	rez, ront.
Cond.	J'abſoud	-rois,	rois, roit;	abſoud	-rions,	riez, roient.
S. P.	J'abſolv	-e,	es, e;	abſolv	-ions,	iez, ent.
Imp.	Abſo		-us, lve;	abſolv	-ons,	ez, ent.

Abſtraire, *to abſtract*, *on* traire 35.
Accourir, *to run to*, *on* courir, 10.
Accueillir, *to welcome*, *on* cueillir 12.

II. ACQUERIR, *to acquire.*

Inf. Acquérir, *to acquire.* *Ger.* acquérant, *acquiring.*
Part. aquis, *acquired.*

Preſ.	J'acquie	-rs,	rs,	rt;	acquér	-ons, ez, ent.
Imp.	J'acquér	-ois,	ois,	oit;	acquér	-ions, iez, oient.
Pret.	J'acqu	-is,	is,	it;	acqu	-îmes, îtes, îrent.
Fut.	J'acquer	-rai,	ras,	ra;	acquer	-rons, rez, ront.
Cond.	J'acquer	-rois,	rois,	roit;	acquer	-rions, riez, roient
S. P.	J'acquiér	-e,	es,	e;	acquiér	-ions, iez, ent.

* *The Pupil muſt learn to repeat the Engliſh words which anſwer to every tenſe and perſon of the French verbs; this will be an eaſy taſk, if he remembers that* to *is the mark of the preſent of the infinitive*; did *of the imperfect of the indicative*; ſhall *or* will *of the future*; would, could, *or* ſhould, *of the conditional*; may *of the preſent of the ſubjunctive*; might *of the preterite*; *and* let *of the imperative mood. The figures* 1, 2, 3, *denote the firſt, ſecond, and third perſons of the ſingular and plural.*

	Singular.			Plural.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
Pret. J'acqu	-iſſe,	iſſes,	ît;	acqu	-iſſions,	iſſiez,	iſſent.
Imp. Acquie	—	-rs	re;	acquér	-ons,	ez,	ent.

Admettre, *to admit*, *on* mettre 19.

III. ALLER, *to go.*

Inf. Aller, *to go.* *Ger.* allant, *going.* *Part.* allé, *gone.*

Preſ. Je	-vais,	vas,	va;		allons,	allez,	vont.
Imp. J'all	-ois,	oit,	ois;	all	-ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret. J'all	-ai,	as,	a;	all	-âmes,	âtes,	êrent.
Fut. J'i	-rai,	ras,	ra;	i	-rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond. J'i	-rois,	rois,	roit;	i	-rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P. J'aill	-e,	es,	e;	all	-ions,	iez,	aillent.
Pret. J'all	-aſſe,	aſſes,	ât;	all	-aſſions,	aſſiez,	aſſent.
Imp.	——	va,	aille;		allons,	allez,	aillent.

Apprendre, *to learn*, *on* prendre 28.
Aſſaillir, *to aſſault*, *on* cueillir 12.

IV. S'ASSEOIR, *to ſit down.*

Inf. S'aſſeoir, *to ſit*, &c. *Ger.* s'aſſéyant, *ſitting.* *Part.* aſſis, *ſat.*

Preſ. Je m'aſſ	-ieds,	ieds,	ied;	aſſé	-yons,	yez,	ient.
Imp. Je m'aſſéy	-ois,	ois,	oit;	aſſéy	-ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret. Je m'aſſ	-is,	is,	it;	aſſ	-îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
Fut. Je m'aſſei	-rai,	ras,	ra;	aſſéi	-rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond. Je m'aſſei	-rois	rois,	roit;	aſſéi	-rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P. Je m'aſſéi	-e,	es,	e;	aſſé	-yions,	yiez,	ient.
Pret. Je m'aſſ	-iſſe,	iſſes,	ît;	aſſ	-iſſions,	iſſiez,	iſſent.
Imp. Aſſ		ieds,	eie;	aſſé	-yons,	yez,	ient.

V. BOIRE, *to drink.*

Inf. Boire, *to drink.* *Ger.* buvant, *drinking.* *Part.* bu, *drank.*

Preſ. Je boi	-s,	s,	t;	buv	-ons,	ez,	boivent.
Imp. Je buv	-ois,	ois,	oit;	buv	-ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret. Je b	-us,	us,	ut;	b	-ûmes,	ûtes,	ûrent.
Fut. Je boi	-rai,	ras,	ra;	boi	-rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond. Je boi	-rois,	rois,	roit;	boi	-rions,	riez,	roient.

	Singular.			Plural.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
S. P.	Je boiv -e,	es,	e;	buv ions,	iez	boivent.
Pret.	Je b -uſſe,	uſſes,	ût;	b -uſſions,	uſſiez,	uſſent.
Imp.		bois,	boive;	buvons,	buvez,	boivent

VI. Bouillir, *to boil.*

Inf. Bouillir, *to boil.* *Ger.* bouillant, *boiling.* *Part.* bouilli, *boiled.*

Pref.	Je bou	-s	s,	t;	bouill -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je bouill	-ois,	ois,	oit;	bouill -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je bouill	-is,	is,	it;	bouill -îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
Fut.	Je bouilli	-rai,	ras,	ra;	bouilli -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je bouilli	-rois,	rois,	roit;	bouilli -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je bouill	-e,	es,	e;	bouill -ions,	iez,	ent.
Pret.	Je bouill	-iſſe,	iſſes,	it;	bouill -iſſions,	iſſiez,	iſſent.
Imp.	——		bous,	bouille;	bouill ons,	ez,	ent.

Circonſcrire, *to circumſcribe,* *on* écrire 14.
Comprendre, *to underſtand,* *on* prendre 28.
Commettre, *to commit,* *on* mettre 19.
Complaire, *to pleaſe,* *on* plaire 25.
Compromettre, *to expoſe,* *on* mettre 19.

VII. Conclure, *to conclude.*

Inf. Conclure, *to conclude.* *Ger.* concluant, *concluding.* *Part.* conclu, *concluded.*

Pref.	Je concl	-us,	us,	ut;	conclu -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je conclu	-ois,	ois,	oit;	conclu -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je concl	-us,	us,	ut;	conclû -mes,	ûtes,	ûrent.
Fut.	Je conclu	-rai,	ras,	ra;	conclu -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je conclu	-rois,	rois,	roit;	conclu -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je conclu	-e,	es,	e;	conclu -ions,	iez,	ent.
Pret.	Je concl	-uſſe,	uſſes,	ût;	concl -uſſions,	uſſiez,	uſſent
Imp.	Concl		-us,	ue;	conclu -ons,	ez,	ent.

Concourir, *to concur,* *on* courir 10.

VIII. Confire, *to pickle.*

Inf. Confire, *to pickle.* *Part.* confit, *pickled.*

	Singular.			Plural.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
Preſ.	Je conf -is,	is,	it;	confiſ -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je confiſ -ois,	ois,	oit;	confiſ -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je conf. -is,	is,	it;	conf. -îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
Fut.	Je confi -rai,	ras,	ra;	confi -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je confi -rois,	rois,	roit;	confi -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je confiſ -e,	es,	e;	confiſ -ions,	iez,	ent.
Pret.	Je conf -iſſe,	iſſes,	ît;	conf -iſſions,	iſſiez,	iſſent.
Imp.	Conf	is,	iſe;	confiſ -ons,	ez,	ent.

Conquérir *to conquer, on* acquérir 2.
Contrédire *to contradict, on* dire 13.
Convaincre *to convince, on* vaincre 36.

IX. Coudre, *to ſew.*

Inf. Coudre, *to ſew.* *Ger.* couſant, *ſewing.* *Part.* couſu, *ſewed.*

Preſ.	Je cou -s,	s,	t;	couſ -ons, ez, ent.
Imp.	Je couſ -ois,	ois,	oit;	couſ -ions, iez, oient.
Pret.	Je couſ -is	is,	it;	couſ -îmes, îtes, îrent.
Fut.	Je coud -rai,	ras,	ra;	cou -rons, rez, ront.
Cond.	Je coud -rois,	rois,	roit;	coud -rions, riez, roient.
S. P.	Je couſ -e,	es,	e;	couſ -ions, iez, ent.
Pret.	Je couſ -iſſe,	iſſes,	ît;	couſ -iſſions, iſſiez, iſſent.
Imp.	Cou ——	-s,	ſe;	couſ -ons, ez, ent.

X. Courir, *to run.*

Inf. Courir, *to run.* *Ger.* courant, *running.* *Part.* couru, *run.*

Preſ.	Je cou -rs,	rs,	rt;	cour -ons, ez, ent.
Imp.	Je cour -ois,	ois,	oit;	cour -ions, iez, oient.
Pret.	Je cour -us,	us,	ut;	cour -ûmes, ûtes, ûrent.
Fut.	Je cour -rai,	ras,	ra;	cour -rons, rez, ront.
Cond.	Je cour -rois,	rois,	roit;	cour -rions, riez, roient.
S. P.	Je cour -e,	es,	e;	cour -ions, iez, ent.
Pret.	Je cour -uſſe,	uſſes,	ût;	cour -uſſions, uſſiez, uſſent.
Imp.	Cour ——	s,	e;	cour -ons, ez, ent.

Couvrir *to cover, on* offrir 23.

XI. CROIRE, *to believe.*

Inf. Croire, *to believe.* *Ger.* croyant, *believing.* *Part.* cru, *believed.*

	Singular.				Plural.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
Preſ.	Je croi -s,	s,	t;	croy -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je croy -ois,	ois,	oit;	croy -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je cr -us,	us,	ut;	cr -ûmes,	ûtes,	ûrent.
Fut.	Je croi -rai,	ras,	ra;	croi -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je croi, -rois,	rois,	roit;	croi -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je croi -e,	es,	e;	cro -yions,	yiez,	ient.
Pret.	Je cr -uſſe,	uſſes,	ût;	cr -uſſions,	uſſiez,	uſſent.
Imp.	Croi ——	s,	e;	cro -yons,	yez,	ient.

XII. CUEILLIR, *to gather.*

Inf. Cueillir, *to gather.* *Ger.* cueillant, *gathering.* *Part.* cueilli, *gathered.*

Preſ.	Je cueill -e	es,	e;	cueill -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je cueill -ois,	ois,	oit;	cueill -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je cueill -is,	is,	it;	cueill -îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
Fut.	Je cueille -rai,	ras,	ra;	cueille -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je cueille -rois,	rois,	roit;	cueille -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je cueill -e,	es,	e;	cueill -ions,	iez,	ent.
Pret.	Je cueill -iſſe,	iſſes,	ît;	cueill -iſſions,	iſſiez,	iſſent.
Imp.	Cueill ——	-e	e;	cueill -ons,	ez,	ent.

Découdre, *to unſew*, *on* coudre 9.
Découvrir, *to diſcover*, *on* offrir 23.
Dédire, *to unſay*, *on* dire 13.
Décrire, *to deſcribe*, *on* écrire 14.
Démettre, *to put out*, *on* mettre 19.
Se démettre, *to reſign*, *on* mettre 19.
Déplaire, *to diſpleaſe*, *on* plaire 25.
Déſapprendre, *to unlearn*, *on* prendre 28.

XIII. DIRE, *to ſay.*

Inf. Dire, *to ſay.* *Ger.* diſant, *ſaying.* *Part.* dit. *ſaid.*

Preſ.	Je d -is,	is,	it;	diſ -ons,	dites,	diſent.

	Singular.				Plural.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
Imp.	Je dif	-ois,	ois, oit;	dif -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je d	-is,	is, it;	d -îmes,	îtes,	irent.
Fut.	Je di	-rai,	ras, ra;	di -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je di	-rois,	rois, roit;	di -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je dif	-e,	es, e;	dif -ions,	iez,	ſent.
Pret.	Je d	-iſſe	iſſes, ît;	d -iſſions,	iſſiez,	iſſent.
Imp.	d		is, iſe;	dif -ons,	dites,	diſent.

Diſcourir, *to diſcourſe, on* courir 10.
Diſſoudre, *to diſſolve, on* abſoudre 1.
Diſtraire, *to diſtract, on* traire 35.

XIV. Ecrire, *to write.*

Inf. écrire, *to write. Ger.* écrivant, *writing. Part.* écrit, *written.*

Preſ.	J'écr	-is,	is, it;	écriv -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	J'écriv	-ois,	ois, oit;	écriv -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	J'écriv	-is,	is, it;	écriv -îmes,	îtes,	irent.
Fut.	J'écri	-rai,	ras, ra;	écri -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	J'écri	-rois,	rois, roit;	écri -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	J'écriv	-e,	es, e;	écriv -ions,	iez,	ent.
Pret.	J'écriv	-iſſe,	iſſes, ît;	écriv -iſſions,	iſſiez,	iſſent.
Imp.	écr		is, ive;	écriv -ons,	ez,	ent.

Elire, *to elect, on* lire 18.
Emoudre, *to grind, on* moudre 20.
Encourir, *to incur, on* courir 10.
S'entremettre, *to interpoſe, on* mettre 19.
Entréprendre, *to undertake, on* prendre 28.
Entrévoir, *to have a glimpſe, on* voir 39.
Entrouvrir, *to open a little, on* offrir 23.

XV. Envoyer, *to ſend.*

Inf. Envoyer, *to ſend. Ger.* envoyant, *ſending. Part.* envoyé, *ſent.*

Preſ.	J'envoi	-e,	es, e;	envo -yons,	yez,	ient.
Imp.	J'envoy	-ois,	ois, oit;	envoy -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	J'envoy	-ai,	as, a;	envoy -âmes,	âtes,	êrent.

	Singular.			Plural.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
Fut.	J'enver -rai,	ras,	ra;	enver -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	J'enver -rois,	rois,	roit;	enver -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	J'envoi -e,	es,	e;	envo -yions,	yiez,	ient,
Pret.	J'envoy -aſſe,	aſſes,	ât;	envoy -aſſions,	aſſiez,	aſſent.
Imp.	envoi -e,		e;	envo -yons.	yez,	ient.

Equivaloir, *to be equal, on* valoir 37.
Exclure, *to exclude, on* conclure 7.
Extraire, *to extract, on* traire 35.

XVI. Fuir, *to ſhun.*

Inf. Fuir, *to ſhun.* *Ger.* fuyant, *ſhunning.* *Part.* fui, *ſhunned.*

Preſ.	Je fu -is,	is,	it;	fuy -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je fuy -ois,	ois,	oit;	fuy -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je fu -is,	is,	it;	fu -îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
Fut.	Je fui -rai,	ras,	ra;	fui -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je fui -rois,	rois,	roit;	fui -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je fui -e	es,	e;	fu -yions,	yiez,	ient.
Pret.	Je fu -iſſe,	iſſes,	ît;	fu -iſſions,	iſſiez,	iſſent.
Imp.	Fu -is,		ie;	fu -yons,	yez,	ient.

XVII. Haïr, *to hate.*

Inf. Haïr, *to hate.* *Ger.* haïſſant, *hating.* *Part.* haï, *hated.*

Preſ.	Je hai -s,	s,	t;	haïſſ -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je haïſſ -ois,	ois,	oit;	haïſſ -ions,	iez,	oient.
Fut.	Je haï -rai,	ras,	ra;	haï -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je haï -rois,	rois,	roit;	haï -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je haïſſ -e,	es,	e;	haïſſ -ions,	iez,	ent.

Inſcrire, *to inſcribe, on* écrire 14.
Interdire, *to forbid, on* dire 13.

XVIII. Lire, *to read.*

Inf. Lire, *to read.* *Ger.* liſant, *reading.* *Par.* lu, *read.*

Preſ.	Je l -is,	is,	it;	liſ -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je liſ -ois,	ois,	oit;	liſ -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je l -us,	us,	ut;	l -ûmes,	ûtes,	ûrent.

	Singular.			Plural.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
Fut.	Je li -rai,	ras,	ra;	li -rons.	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je li -rois,	rois,	roit;	li -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je lif -e,	es,	e;	lif -ions,	iez,	ent.
Pret.	Je l uſſe,	uſſes,	ût;	l -uſſions,	uſſez,	uſſent.
Imp.	l	-is,	iſe;	lif -ons,	ez,	ent.

Maudire * *to curſe*, *on* dire 13
Médire, *to ſlander*, *on* dire 13
Méſoffrir, *to underbid*, *on* offrir 23
Se méprendre, *to miſtake*, *on* prendre 28

XIX. METTRE, *to put.*

Inf. Mettre, *to put.* *Ger.* mettant, *putting.* *Part.* mis, *put.*

Preſ.	Je me -ts,	ts,	t;	mett -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je mett -ois,	ois,	oit;	mett -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je m -is,	is,	it;	m -îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
Fut.	Je mett -rai,	ras,	ra;	mett -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je mett -rois,	rois,	roit;	mett -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je mett -e,	es,	e;	mett -ions,	iez,	ent.
Pret.	Je m -iſſe,	iſſes,	ît;	m -iſſions,	iſſiez,	iſſent.
Imp.	me	ts,	tte;	mett -ons,	ez,	ent.

XX. MOUDRE, *to grind.*

Inf. Moudre, *to grind.* *Ger.* moulant, *grinding.* *Part.* moulu. *ground.*

Preſ.	Je mou -ds,	ds,	d;	moul -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je moul -ois,	ois,	oit;	moul -ions.	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je moul -us,	us,	ut;	moul -ûmes,	ûtes,	ûrent.
Fut.	Je moud -rai,	ras,	ra;	moud -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je moud -rois,	rois	roit;	moud -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je moul -e,	es,	e;	moul -ions,	iez,	ent.
Pret.	Je moul uſſe,	uſſes,	ût;	moul -uſſions,	uſſiez,	uſſent.
Imp.	mou	-ds,	le;	moul -ons,	ez,	ent.

* Maudire *makes in the Ger.* maudiſſant, *in the Imperf.* je maudiſſois, *and* je maudiſſe *in the Preſ. and Pret. Subj.*

XXI. Mourir, *to die.*

Inf. Mourir, *to die.* *Ger.* mourant, *dying.* *Part.* mort, *dead.*

	Singular.			Plural.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
Pref.	Je meu -rs,	rs,	rt;	mour -ons,	ez,	meurent.
Imp.	Je mour -ois,	ois,	oit;	mour -ions,	iez,	oient
Pret.	Je mour -us,	us,	ut;	mour -ûmes,	ûtes,	ûrent.
Fut.	Je mour -rai,	ras,	ra;	mour -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je mour -rois,	rois,	roit;	mour -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je meur -e,	es,	e;	mour -ions,	iez,	meurent.
Pret.	Je mour -usse,	usses,	ût;	mour -ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
Imp.	meur	-s,	e;	mour -ons,	ez,	meurent.

XXII. Naitre, *to be born.*

Inf. Nâitre, *to be born.* *Ger.* naissant, *being born.* *Part.* né, *born.*

Pref.	Je nai -s,	s,	t;	naiss -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je naiss -ois,	ois,	oit;	naiss -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret	Je naqu -is,	is,	it;	naqu-îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
Fut.	Je naît -rai,	ras,	ra;	naît -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je naît -rois,	rois,	roit;	naît -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je naiss -e,	es,	e;	naiss -ions,	iez,	ent.
Pret.	Je naqu -isse,	isses,	ît;	naqu-issions,	issiez,	issent.

XXIII. Offrir, *to offer.*

Inf. Offrir, *to offer.* *Ger.* offrant, *offering.* *Part.* offert, *offered.*

Pref.	J'offr -e,	es,	e;	offr -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	J'offr -ois,	ois,	oit;	offr -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	J'offr -is,	is,	it;	offr -îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
Fut.	J'offri -rai,	ras,	ra;	offri -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	J'offri -rois,	rois,	roit;	offri -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	J'offr -e,	es,	e;	offr -ions,	iez,	ent.
Pret.	J'offr -isse,	isses,	ît;	offr -issions,	issiez,	issent.
Imp.	Offr	e,	e;	offr -ons,	ez,	ent.

Omettre, *to omit, on* mettre 19.

Ouvrir, *to open, on* offrir 23.

XXIV. PAITRE, *to graze.*

Inf. Paître, *to graze.* *Ger.* paiſſant, *grazing.* *Part.* pu, *grazed.*

	Singular.			Plural.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
Pref.	Je pai -s,	s,	t;	paiſſ -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je paiſs -ois,	ois,	oit;	paiſſ -ions,	iez,	oient.
Fut.	Je paît -rai,	ras,	ra;	paît -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je paît -rois,	rois,	roit;	paît -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je paiſſ -e,	es,	e;	paiſſ -ions,	iez,	ent.
Imp.	Pai	-s,	ſe;	paiſſ -ons,	ez,	ent.

Parcourir, *to run over, on* courir 10.

XXV. PLAIRE, *to pleaſe.*

Inf. Plaire, *to pleaſe.* *Ger.* plaiſant, *pleaſing.* *Part.* plu, *pleaſed.*

Pref.	Je plai	-s,	s,	t;	plaiſ -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je plaiſ	-ois,	ois,	oit;	plaiſ -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je pl	-us,	us,	ut;	pl -ûmes,	ûtes,	ûrent.
Fut.	Je plai	-rai,	ras,	ra;	plai -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je plai	-rois,	rois,	roit;	plai -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je plais	-e,	es,	e;	plai -ſions,	ſiez,	ſent.
Pret.	Je pl	-uſſe,	uſſes,	ût;	pl -uſſions,	uſſiez,	uſſent.
Imp.	Plai		-s,	ſe;	plaiſ -ons,	ez,	ent.

Pourſuivre, *to purſue, on* ſuivre 34.

XVI. POURVOIR, *to provide.*

Inf. Pourvoir, *to provide.* *Ger.* pourvoyant. *Part.* pourvu.

Pref.	Je pourvoi	-s,	s,	t;	pourvo -yons,	yez,	ient.
Imp.	Je pourvoy	-ois,	ois,	oit;	pourvoy -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je pourv	-us,	us,	ut;	pourv -ûmes,	ûtes,	ûrent.
Fut.	Je pourvoi	-rai,	ras,	ra;	pourvoi -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je pourvoi	-rois,	rois,	roit;	pourvoi -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je pourvoi	-e,	es,	e;	pourvo -yions,	yiez,	ient.
Pret.	Je pourvu:	-ſſe,	uſſes,	ût;	pourv -uſſions,	uſſiez,	uſſent.
Imp.	Pourvoi		-s,	e;	pourvo -yons,	yez,	ient.

XXVII. POUVOIR, *to be able.*

Inf. Pouvoir, *to be able.* *Ger.* pouvant. *Part.* pu.

Pref.	Je peu	-x,	x,	t;	pouv -ons,	ez,	peuvent.
Imp.	Je pou	-vois,	ois,	oit;	pouv -ions,	iez,	oient.

	Singular.				Plural.			
		1	2	3		1	2	3
Pret.	Je p	-us,	us,	ut;	p	-ûmes,	ûtes,	ûrent.
Fut.	Je pou	-rai,	ras,	ra;	pou	-rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je pou	-rois,	rois,	roit;	pou	-rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je puiſſ	-e,	es,	e;	puiſſ	-ions,	iez,	ent.
Pret.	Je p	-uſſe,	uſſes,	ût;	p	-uſſions,	uſſiez,	uſſent.

Predire, *to foretell, on* dire 13.

XXVIII. Prendre, *to take.*

Inf. Prendre, *to take.* *Ger.* prenant, *taking.* *Part.* pris, *taken.*

Preſ.	Je pren	-ds,	ds,	d;	prên	-ons,	ez,	nent.
Imp.	Je pren	-ois,	ois,	oit;	pren	-ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je pr	-is,	is,	it;	pr	-îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
Fut.	Je prend	-rai,	ras,	ra;	prend	-rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je prend	-rois,	rois,	roit;	prend	-rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je prenn	-e,	es,	e;	pren	-ions,	iez,	nent.
Pret.	Je pr	-iſſe,	iſſes,	ît;	pr	-iſſions,	iſſiez,	iſſent.
Imp.	Pren		ds,	ne;	pren	-ons,	ez,	nent.

Preſcrire, *to preſcribe, on* écrire 14.
Prévaloir, *to prevail, on* valoir 37.

XXIX. Prevoir, *to foreſee.*

Inf. Prévoir, *to foreſee.* *Ger.* prévoyant. *Part.* prévu.

Preſ.	Je prévoi	-s,	s,	t;	prévo	-yons,	yez,	ient.
Imp.	Je prévoy	-ois,	ois,	oit;	prévoy	-ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je prév	-is,	is,	it;	prév	-îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
Fut.	Je prévoi	-rai,	ras,	ra;	prévoi	-rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je prévoi	-rois,	rois,	roit;	prevoi	-rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	e prévoi	-e;	es,	e;	prévo	-yions,	yiez,	ient.
Pret.	Je prév	-iſſe,	iſſes,	ît;	prév	-iſſions,	iſſiez,	iſſent.
Imp.	Prévoi		-s,	e;	prévo	-yons,	yez,	ient.

Promettre *to promiſe, on* mettre 19.
Proſcrire *to proſcribe, on* écrire 14.
Rapprendre *to learn again, on* prendre 28.
Reconquérir *to reconquer, on* acquérir 2.
Recoudre *to ſew again, on* coudre 9.
Recourir *to have recourſe, on* courir 10.
Recouvrir *to new cover, on* offrir 23.
Récrire *to write over, on* écrire 14.
Recueillir *to gather, on* cueillir 12.

Redire,	*to say again,*	*on* dire	13.
Relire,	*to read over,*	*on* lire	18.
Remettre,	*to put again,*	*on* mettre	19.
Remoudre,	*to grind again,*	*on* moudre	20.
Renaître,	*to be born again,*	*on* naître	22.
Renvoyer,	*to send back,*	*on* envoyer	15.
Reprendre,	*to take again,*	*on* prendre	28.
Requérir,	*to require,*	*on* acquérir	2.

XXX. Resoudre, *to resolve.*

Inf. Résoudre, *to resolve.* *Ger.* résolvant. *Part.* résolu.

	Singular.			Plural.		
	1.	2	3	1	2	3
Pres.	Je résou	-ds,	ds, d;	résolv -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je résolv	-ois,	ois, oit;	résolv -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je résol	-us,	us, ut;	résol -ûmes,	ûtes,	ûrent.
Fut.	Je résoud	-rai,	ras, ra;	résoud -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je résoud	-rois,	rois, roit;	résoud -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je résolv	-e,	es, e;	résolv -ions,	iez,	ent.
Pres.	Je résol	-usse,	usses, ût;	résol -ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
Imp.	Réso		uds, lve;	résol -vons,	ez,	ent.

XXXI. Revetir, *to invest.*

Inf. Revêtir, *to invest.* *Ger.* revêtant. *Part.* revêtu.

Pres.	Je revê	-ts,	ts, t;	revêt -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je revêt	-ois,	ois, oit;	revêt -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je revêt	-is,	is, it;	revêt -îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
Fut.	Je revêti	-rai,	ras, ra;	revêti -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je revêti	-rois,	rois, roit;	revêti -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je revêt	-e,	es, e;	revêt -ions,	iez,	ent.
Pret.	Je revêt	-isse,	isses, ît;	revêt -issions,	issiez,	issent.
Imp.	Revêt		s, e;	revêt -ons,	ez,	ent.

Revivre, *to revive,* *on* vivre 38.
Revoir, *to see again,* *on* voir 39.

XXXII. Rire, *to laugh.*

Inf. Rire, *to laugh.* *Ger.* riant, *laughing.* *Part.* ri, *laughed.*

Pres.	Je r	-is	is, it;	ri -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je ri	-ois,	ois, oit;	ri -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je r	-is,	is, it	r -îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
Fut.	Je ri	-rai,	ras, ra;	ri -rons,	rez,	ront.

	Singular.			Plural.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
Cond.	Je ri -rois,	rois,	roit;	ri -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je ri -e,	es,	e;	ri -ions,	iez,	ent.
Pret.	Je r -iſſe,	iſſes,	ît;	r -iſſions,	iſſiez,	iſſent.
Imp.	R	-is,	ie;	ri -ons,	ez,	ent.

Rouvrir, *to open again*, *on* offrir 23.

XXXIII. Savoir, *to know* 23.

Inf. Savoir, *to know*. *Ger.* ſachant, *knowing*. *Part.* ſu, *known*.

Preſ.	Je ſai -a	s,	t;	ſav -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je ſav -ois,	ois,	oit;	ſav -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je ſ -us,	us,	ut;	ſ -ûmes,	ſûtes,	ûrent.
Fut.	Je ſau -rai,	ras,	ra;	ſau -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je ſau -rois,	rois,	roit;	ſau -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je ſach -e,	es,	e;	ſach -ions,	iez,	ent.
Pret.	Je ſ -uſſe,	uſſes,	ût;	ſ -uſſions,	uſſiez,	uſſent.
Imp.	Sach -e,		e;	ſach -ons,	ez,	ent.

Secourir, *to relieve*, *on* courir 10.
S'enquérir, *to inquire*, *on* acquérir 2.
S'enſuivre, *to follow*, *on* ſuivre 34.
Souffrir, *to ſuffer*, *on* offrir 23.
Soumettre, *to ſubmit*, *on* mettre 19.
Souſcrire, *to ſubſcribe*, *on* écrire 14.
Sourire, *to ſmile*, *on* rire 32.
Souſtraire, *to ſubtract*, *on* traire 35.

XXXIV. Suivre, *to follow*.

Inf. Suivre, *to follow*. *Ger.* ſuivant, *following*. *Part.* ſuivi, *followed*.

Preſ.	Je ſui -s,	s,	t;	ſuiv -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je ſuiv -ois,	ois,	oit;	ſuiv -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je ſuiv -is,	is,	it;	ſuiv -îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
Fut.	Je ſuiv -rai,	ras,	ra;	ſuiv -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je ſuiv -rois,	rois,	roit;	ſuiv -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je ſuiv -e,	es,	e;	ſuiv -ions,	iez,	ent.
Pret.	Je ſuiv -iſſe,	iſſes,	ît;	ſuiv -iſſions,	iſſiez,	iſſent.
Imp.	Sui -s,		ve;	ſuiv -ons,	ez,	ent.

Surprendre, *to ſurpriſe*, *on* prendre 28.
Survivre, *to out-live*, *on* vivre 38.
Taire, *to conceal*, *on* plaire 25.

XXXV. TRAIRE, *to milk.*

Inf. Traire, *to milk.* *Ger.* trayant, *milking.* *Part.* trait, *milked.*

	Singular.			Plural.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
Pref.	Je trai -s	s,	t;	tra -yons,	yez,	ient.
Imp.	Je tray -ois,	ois,	oit;	tray -ions,	iez,	oient.
Fut.	Je trai -rai,	ras,	ra;	trai -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je trai -rois,	rois,	roit;	trai -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je tray -e,	es,	e;	tra -yions,	yiez,	ient.
Imp.	tra	is,	ye;	tra -yons,	yez,	ient.

Tranſcrire, *to tranſcribe,* *on* écrire 14.
Tranſmettre, *to tranſmit,* *on* mettre 19.
Treſſaillir, *to ſtart,* *on* cueillir 12.

XXXVI. VAINCRE, *to vanquiſh.*

Inf. Vaincre, *to vanquiſh.* *Ger.* vainquant, *vanquiſhing.* *Part.* vaincu, *vanquiſhed.*

Pref.	Je vain -cs,	cs,	c,	vainqu -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je vainqu-ois,	ois,	oit;	vainqu -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je vainqu-is,	is,	it;	vainqu -îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
Fut.	Je vainc -rai,	ras,	ra;	vainc -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je vainc -rois,	rois,	roit;	vainc -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je vainqu-e,	es,	e;	vainqu -ions,	iez,	ent.
Pret.	Je vainqu-iſſe,	iſſe,	ît;	vainqu -iſſions,	iſſiez,	iſſent.
Imp.	vain	cs,	que;	vainqu -ons,	ez,	ent.

XXXVII. VALOIR, *to be worth.*

Inf. Valoir, *to be worth.* *Ger.* valant, *being worth.* *Part.* valu, *been worth.*

Pref.	Je vau -x,	x,	t;	val -ons,	ez,	ent,
Imp.	Je val -ois,	ois,	oit;	val -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je val -us,	us,	ut;	val -ûmes,	ûtes,	ûrent.
Fut.	Je vaud -rai,	ras,	ra;	vaud -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je vaud -rois,	rois,	roit;	vaud -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je vaill -e,	es,	e;	val -ions,	iez,	vaillent.
Pret.	Je val -uſſe,	uſſes,	ût;	val -uſſions,	uſſiez,	uſſent.

XXXVIII. VIVRE, *to live.*

Inf. Vivre, *to live.* *Ger.* vivant, *living.* *Part.* vécu, *lived.*

	Singular.			Plural.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
Pref.	Je v -is,	is	it;	viv -ons,	ez,	ent.
Imp.	Je viv -ois,	ois,	oit;	viv -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je véc -us,	us,	ut;	véc -ûmes,	ûtes,	ûrent.
Fut.	Je viv -rai,	ras,	ra;	viv -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je viv -rois,	rois,	roit;	viv -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je véc -usse,	usses,	ût;	véc -ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
Imp.	——	vis,	vive;	vivons,	vivez,	vivent.

XXXIX. VOIR, *to see.*

Inf. Voir, *to see.* *Ger.* voyant, *seeing.* *Part.* vu, *seen.*

Pref.	Je voi -s,	s,	t;	voy -ons,	ez,	voient.
Imp.	Je voy -ois,	ois,	oit;	voy -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je v -is,	is,	it;	v -îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
Fut.	Je ver -rai,	ras,	ra;	ver -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je ver -rois,	rois,	roit;	ver -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je voi -e,	es,	e;	vo -yions,	yiez,	voient.
Pret.	Je v -isse,	isses,	ît;	v -issions,	issiez,	issent.
Imp.	——	vois,	voie;	vo -yons,	yez,	voient.

XL. VOULOIR, *to be willing.*

Inf. Vouloir, *to be willing.* *Ger.* voulant, *being willing.* *Part.* voulu, *been willing.*

Pref.	Je veu -x,	x,	t;	voul -ons,	ez,	veulent.
Imp.	Je voul -ois,	ois,	oit;	voul -ions,	iez,	oient.
Pret.	Je voul -us,	us,	ut;	voul -ûmes,	ûtes,	ûrent.
Fut.	Je voud -rai,	ras,	ra;	voud -rons,	rez,	ront.
Cond.	Je voud -rois,	rois,	roit;	voud -rions,	riez,	roient.
S. P.	Je veuil -e,	es,	e;	voul -ions,	iez,	veuillent.
Pret.	Je voul -usse,	usses,	ût;	voul -ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
Imp.	—	veux,	veuille;	voul -ons,	ez,	veuillent.

The following Verbs are of good Uſe only in the Tenſes and Perſons hereafter mentioned.

Inf. bruire, *to ruſtle. Ger.* bruyant. *Imp.* il bruyoit, ils bruyoient.

Inf. braire, *to bray like an aſs. Preſ.* il brait, ils braient.

Inf. échoir, *to happen. Part.* échu, *happened. Preſ.* il échet, *it happens. Fut.* il échera, *it will happen.*

Inf. déchoir, *to decay. Part.* déchu, *decayed.*

Inf. clorre, *to cloſe. Part.* clos. *Preſ. ind.* je clos, tu clos, il clot. *Fut.* je clorrai, tu clorras, il clorra. *Cond.* je clorrois, tu clorrois, il clorroit.

Inf. enclorre, *to incloſe,* is conjugated like clorre.

Inf. éclore, *to be hatched. Part.* éclos. *Preſ. ind.* il éclot, ils écloſent. *Fut.* il éclora, ils écloront. *Cond.* il écloroit, ils écloroient. *Preſ. ſubj.* qu'il écloſe, qu'ils écloſent.

Inf. frire *to fry. Part.* frit. *Preſ. ind.* je fris, tu fris, il frit. *Fut.* je frirai, tu friras, il frira, nous frirons, vous frirez, ils friront. *Cond.* je fri-rois, rois, roit, fri-rions, riez, roient. In other tenſes we make uſe of the verb *faire,* and of the infinitive *frire,* as, *je feſois frire, tu feſois frire,* &c.

Inf. mouvoir, émouvoir, *to move,* promouvoir, *to promote,* make in the participle mu, ému, promu.

Inf. ouir, *to hear. Part.* oui, *heard.* The participle is often followed by dire, as, *j'ai oui dire.*

Inf. querir, *to fetch,* is uſed in the infinitive only after the verbs *aller, envoyer,* and *venir.*

Inf. raſſeoir, *to ſettle. Part.* raſſis. Surſeoir, *to adjourn. Part.* ſurſis.

Preſ. ind. il ſied, ils ſieent. *Imp.* ils ſieoit, ſieoient. *Fut.* il ſiera, ils ſieront. *Cond.* il ſieroit, ils ſieroient.

Inf. vêtir, *to cloath. Part.* vêtu, *cloathed.*

SECTION THE EIGHTH.

Conjugation of the Impersonal Verbs.

NEIGER, *to snow.*

Inf. neiger, *ger.* neigeant, *part.* neigé, *comp.* avoir neigé, ayant neigé.

Pres. ind. il neige, *imp.* il neigeoit, *pret.* il neigea, *fut.* il neigera, *cond.* il neigeroit, *pres. subj.* il neige, *pret.* il neigeât, *comp. tenses,* il a neigé, il avoit neigé, &c.

Geler, *to freeze,* éclairer, *to lighten,* tonner, *to thunder,* and grêler, *to hail,* are conjugated on neiger.

PLEUVOIR, *to rain.*

Inf. pleuvoir, *ger.* pleuvant, *part.* plu, *comp.* avoir plû, ayant plu.

Pres. ind. il pleut, *imp.* il pleuvoit, *pret.* il plut, *fut.* il pleuvra, *cond.* il pleuvroit, *pres. subj.* il pleuve, *pret.* il plût, *comp. tenses,* il a plu, il avoit, plu, &c.

FALLOIR, *to be necessary.*

Inf. falloir, *part.* fallu, *comp.* avoir fallu, ayant fallu.

Pres. ind. il faut, *imp.* il falloit, *pret.* il fallut, *fut.* il faudra, *cond.* il faudroit, *pres. subj.* il faille, *pret.* il fallût, *comp. tenses,* il a fallu, il avoit fallu, &c.

Y AVOIR, *to be there.*

Inf. y avoir, *ger.* y ayant, *comp.* y avoir eu, y ayant eu.

Pres. ind. il y a, *there is, imp.* il y avoit, *there was, pret.* il y eut, *there was, fut.* il y aura, *there shall be, cond.* il y auroit, *there would be, pres. subj.* il y ait, *there may be, pret.* il y eût, *there might be, comp. tenses,* il y a eu, *there has been,* il y avoit eu, *there had been,* &c.

A new and eaſy Method to learn all Verbs Regular and Irregular.

This method is divided into two ſections: the firſt teaches how to form the tenſes of a verb, and the ſecond how to form the perſons of a tenſe.

§ I. *Rules for the Formation of the Tenſes of Verbs.*

The *preſ. inf.* the *gerund*, the *part*, the *preſ.* and *pret. indic.* are called the primitive tenſes, becauſe all others are formed from them according to the following rules. Theſe five tenſes muſt be learnt by heart in the preceding conjugations.

Rule I. The imperfect is formed from the gerund, by changing the final *ant* into *ois*; as, *parlant*, *croyant*, gerund; *je parlois*, *je croyois*, imperfect.

Rule II. The future is formed from the preſent infinitive, by adding *ai* to the final of thoſe which end with a conſonant; as, *donner*, *dormir*, infinitive; *je donnerai*, *je dormirai*, future; and by changing the final *e* into *ai*, for thoſe which end with a vowel; as, *lire*, *vendre*, infinitive; *je lirai*, *je vendrai*, future.

Rule III. The conditional is alſo formed from the preſent infinitive, by adding *ois* to the final of thoſe which end with a conſonant; as, *chanter*, *punir*, infinitive; *je chanterois*, *je punirois*, conditional; and by changing *e* mute into *ois* for thoſe which end with a vowel; as, *dire*, *répondre*, infinitive; *je dirois*, *je répondrois*, conditional.

Rule IV. The preſent ſubjunctive is formed from the gerund, by changing the final *ant* into *e* mute, and *yant* into *ie*; as, *ſervant*, *croyant*, gerund; *je ſerve*, *je croie*, preſ. ſubj.

Rule V. The ſubjunctive preterite is formed from the preterite of the indicative, by changing the final *ai* into *aſſe*, for the verbs of the firſt conjugation; as, *je donnai*, *j'aimai*, pret. ind. *je donnaſſe*, *j'aimaſſe*, pret. ſubj. and by adding *ſe* to all thoſe which end in *s*, as *j'agis*, *je lus*, *je tins*, pret. ind. *j'agiſſe*, *je luſſe*, *je tinſſe*, pret. ſubj.

Exceptions to theſe Rules.

The exceptions to rule the ſecond are, the verbs of the fourth, fifth, and ſixth conjugations, which make, in the future, *je tiendrai, je recevrai, je ferai*; and alſo the following irregulars: *avoir, être, acquérir, s'aſſeoir, courir, cueillir, envoyer, falloir, mourir, pleuvoir, pouvoir, ſavoir, valoir, vouloir,* and thoſe conjugated upon them; which make, in the future, *j'aurai, je ſerai, j'acquerai, je m'aſſiérai, je courrai, je cueillerai, j'enverrai, il faudra, je mourrai, il pleuvra, je pourrai, je ſaurai, je vaudrai, je voudrai*; *voir* makes *je verrai*.

The exceptions to rule the third are, the verbs laſt mentioned, which form their conditional from the future, by changing *rai* into *rois*; as, *je tiendrai, je recevrai, je ferai*, future; *je tiendrois, je recevrois, je ferois*, conditional.

The exceptions to rule the fourth are, verbs of the fourth, fifth, and ſixth regular conjugations, which make, *je tienne, je reçoive, je faſſe*, in the preſ. ſubjunctive; and alſo the following irregulars, *aller, boire, être, falloir, mourir, pouvoir, prendre, valoir, vouloir*, and thoſe conjugated upon them, which make, in the preſ. ſubj. *j'aille, je boive, je ſois, il faille, je meure, je puiſſe, je prenne, je vaille, je veuille*.

§ II. *Rules for the Formation of Perſons.*

RULE 1. *Preſ. Ind.*

The firſt perſon ends either in *e, s*, or *x*. When it ends in *e*, the ſecond adds an *s*, and the third is like the firſt; as, *je parle, tu parles, il parle*.

When it ends in *s* or *x*, the ſecond is like the firſt, and the third changes the final *s* or *x* into *t*; as, *je lis, tu lis, il lit*; *je veux, tu veux, il veut*.

However, *s* is left out in the third perſon of verbs which end in *cs, ds*, or *ts* in the firſt; as, *je vaincs, tu vaincs, il vainc*; *je perds, tu perds, il perd*; *je mets, tu mets, il met*.

The three perſons plural are formed from the gerund, by changing the final *ant* into *ons, ez, ent*, and *yant* into *yons, yez,*

ient: as *parlant, croyant,* ger. *nous parlons, vous parlez, ils parlent; nous croyons, vous croyez, ils croient,* plural of the pref. of the indicative.

The Exceptions are:

1. The verb *aller,* which makes, *je vais, tu vas, il va; nous allons, vous allez, ils vont.*
2. *être,* which makes, *je ſuis, tu es, il eſt; nous ſommes, vous êtes, ils ſont.*
3. *Savoir,* which makes, *nous ſavons, vous ſavez, ils ſavent.*
4. *Faire,* and its compounds, which makes, *vous faites, ils font.*
5. *Dire,* and *redire,* which make, *vous dites* and *vous redites.*
6. The verbs *avoir, boire, mourir, pouvoir, prendre, recevoir, tenir, vouloir,* and thoſe conjugated upon them; which make, in the third perſon plural, *ils ont, ils boivent, ils meurent, ils peuvent, ils prennent, ils reçoivent, ils tiennent, ils veulent.*

RULE 2. Plural of the Sub. Pref.

The firſt and ſecond perſons of the pref. of the ſubj. are formed from the gerund, by changing the final *ant* into *ions,* for the firſt perſon, and *iez* for the ſecond: as, *parlant, diſant,* gerund; *nous parlions, vous parliez, nous diſions, vous diſiez,* plural ſubjunctive.

The verb *être* is excepted, and makes, *nous ſoyons, vous ſoyez, ils ſoient;* and the verb *faire,* which makes *nous faſſions, vous faſſiez, ils faſſent.*

RULE 3. Imperative.

The third perſons of the imperative are invariably like the third of the pref. of the ſubj. and other perſons are like the ſame of the pref. of the indicative, except the verbs of the firſt conjugation, which have no *s* for final in the ſecond perſon of the imperative, and alſo the verbs *avoir, être, ſavoir,* and *vouloir,* which have all the perſons of the imperative, like thoſe of the ſubj. preſent.

RULE 4.

The perſons of other tenſes are formed from the firſt, by changing the final as follows:

IMPERFECT OF THE INDICATIVE.

Singular.			Plural.		
1	2	3	1	2	3
ois,	ois,	oit;	ions,	iez,	oient.

Preterite of the Indicative.

ai,	as,	a;	âmes,	âtes,	èrent.
ins,	ins,	int;	înmes,	întes,	înrent.
is,	is,	it;	îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
us,	us,	ut;	ûmes,	ûtes,	ûrent.

Future.

rai,	ras,	ra;	rons,	rez,	ront.

Conditional.

rois,	rois,	roit;	rions,	riez,	roient.

Subjunctive Preſent.

e,	es,	e;	See Rule 2.	- -	ent.

Preterite of the Subjunctive.

aſſe,	aſſes,	ât;	aſſions,	aſſiez,	aſſent.
inſſe,	inſſes,	înt;	inſſions,	inſſiez,	inſſent.
iſſe,	iſſes,	ît;	iſſions,	iſſiez,	iſſent.
uſſe,	uſſes,	ût;	uſſions,	uſſiez,	uſſent.

OF ADVERBS.

The word Adverb *ſignifies joined to a* Verb.

The Adverb expreſſes ſome circumſtances of an adjective, of a verb, of a participle, or even of another adverb to which it has reference. Example:

Dieu eſt *infiniment* juſte; Il punira *ſévérement* les impies.

God is infinitely *juſt*; *He will puniſh* ſeverely *the impious*.

Moſt of the French adjectives become adverbs by altering their final according to the three following rules:

RULE I.

Adjectives which end in *ant* or *ent* become adverbs, by changing the final *ant* into *amment*, and *ent* into *emment*; as, *conſtant*, *prudent*, *patient*, adjectives; *conſtamment*, *prudemment*, *patiemment*, adverbs.

RULE II.

Adjectives which end in a vowel become adverbs, by adding *ment* to the final; as, *ſage*, *poli*, *ingenu*, adjectives; *ſagement*, *poliment*, *ingenument*, adverbs.

RULE III.

Adjectives which end neither in a vowel, nor in *ant* or *ent*, in the maſculine ſingular, become adverbs, by adding *ment* to their feminine termination; as, *grand*, *doux*, *heureux*, adjectives maſculine; *grande*, *douce*, *heureuſe*, adjectives feminine; *grandement*, *doucement*, *heureuſement*, adverbs.

The *e* which precedes *ment* is mute in all adverbs formed from adjectives, except in the following, in which it takes an acute accent: *aiſément*, *aveuglément*, *commodément*, *communément*, *conformément*, *déliberément*, *démésurément*, *déſordonnément*, *déſeperément*, *déterminément*, *effrontément*, *énormément*, *expreſſément*, *figurément*, *impunément*, *incommodément*, *inconſidérément*, *indeterminément*, *inopinément*, *modérément*, *nommément*, *obſcurément*, *obſtinément*, *opiniatrément*, *paſſionément*, *poſément*, *préciſément*, *prématurément*, *privément*, *profondément*, *profuſément*, *proportionément*, *ſenſément*, *ſéparément*.

DIFFERENT SORTS OF ADVERBS.

Beſides the prodigious number of adverbs, formed from adjectives according to the three preceding rules, there are many others, which can be divided into nine claſſes, according to their ſignification; they are as follow:

* *See how to form the feminine of adjectives, page* 39 *and* 40.

1. ADVERBS OF ORDER: as, *prémièrement*, firſt; *ſecondement*, ſecondly; *troiſièmement*, thirdly, &c. *devant*, before; *derrière*, behind; *après*, after; *enſuite*, afterwards, &c.

2. ADVERBS OF PLACE: as, *où*, where; *d'où*, from whence; *ici*, here; *là*, there; *dedans*, within; *dehors*, without; *en haut*, above; *en bas*, below; *loin*, far; *près*, near, &c.

3. ADVERBS OF TIME: as, *à preſent*, now; *aujourd'hui*, to-day; *hier*, yeſterday; *autrefois*, formerly; *bientôt*, ſoon; *dans peu*, ſhortly; *deſormais*, hereafter, &c.

4. ADVERBS OF QUANTITY: as, *combien*, how much; *beaucoup*, much; *peu*, little; *aſſez*, enough; *tant*, ſo much; *autant*, as much; *trop*, too much; *trop peu*, too little, &c.

5. ADVERBS OF COMPARISON: as, *comme*, as; *de même*, in the ſame manner; *auſſi*, as; *autant*, as much; *plus*, more; *moins*, leſs; *pareillement*, likewiſe, &c.

6. ADVERBS OF AFFIRMATION: as, *oui*, yes; *à la vérité*, indeed; *vraiment*, truly; *ſans doute*, without doubt; *aſſurément*, aſſuredly; *certainement*, certainly, &c.

7. ADVERBS OF NEGATION: as, *non*, no; *ne pas*, not; *point du tout*, not at all; *nullement*, by no means, &c.

8. ADVERBS OF INTERROGATION: as, *quand*, when; *pourquoi*, why; *combien*, how much; *comment*, how; *où*, where, &c.

9. ADVERBS OF DOUBT: as, *peut-être*, perhaps; *probablement*, very likely, &c.

OF PREPOSITIONS.

Prepoſitions are ſo called from the Latin verb *præponere*, (which ſignifies placed before) becauſe they are always put before the word they govern. Example: *Ce qui ce fait* dans *la paſſion, ſe fait ſouvent* contre *la raiſon, et nous donne* dans *la ſuite de grands ſujets* de *repentir*.

Prepoſitions are indeclinable. They ſerve to denote the ſeveral relations of *nouns*, *pronouns*, or *adverbs* with one another. They are the following:

à cauſe de, *on account of.*
à côte de, *by.*
à couvert de, *ſecure from.*
à fleur de, *even with.*

à force de, *by dint of.*
à l'abri de, *ſheltered from.*
à la faveur de, *by means of.*
à la manière de, *after the faſhion*
à la reſerve de, *excepting that.*
à l'égard de, *with regard to.*
à l'exception de, *excepted.*
à l'excluſion de, *excepting.*
à l'inſçu de, *unknown to.*
à l'oppoſite de, *over againſt.*
à moins de, *under.*
à raiſon de, *at the rate of.*
à rebours de, *contrary to.*
au deça de, *on this ſide.*
au dedans de, *within.*
au dehors de, *without.*
au delà de, *on that ſide.*
au derrière de, *behind.*
au deſſous de, *under.*
au deſſus de, *upon.*
au devant de, *before.*
au lieu de, *inſtead.*
au milieu de, *in the middle of.*
au moyen de, *by means of.*
au niveau de, *even to.*
au peril de, *at the peril of.*
auprès de, *near.*
au prix de, *at the expence of.*
au riſque de, *at the danger of.*
au tour de, *around.*
au travers de, *through.*
aux environs de, *round about.*
aux depens de, *at the expence of.*
en deça de, *on this ſide.*
en dépit de, *in ſpite of.*
en préſence de, *in preſence of.*
en ſuite de, *after.*
faute de, *for want of.*
hors de, *out of.*
le long de, *along.*
loin de, *far from.*
pour l'amour de, *for the ſake of.*
près de, *near.*
proche de, *nigh.*
tout auprès de, *cloſe to.*
vis-à-vis de, *oppoſite to.*

Prepoſitions which govern the Accuſative Caſe.

après,	*after.*	malgré,	*in ſpite of.*
à-travers,	*through.*	moyennant,	*for.*
avant,	*before.*	non obſtant,	*notwithſtanding.*
avec,	*with.*	outre,	*beſides.*
chez,	*at.*	par,	*by.*
contre,	*againſt.*	parmi,	*among.*
dans,	*in.*	pendant,	*during.*
depuis,	*ſince.*	pour,	*for.*
derrière,	*behind.*	proche,	*near.*
dès,	*from.*	ſans,	*without.*
devant,	*before.*	ſauf,	*ſafe.*
durant,	*during.*	ſelon,	*according to.*
en,	*in.*	ſous,	*under.*
entre,	*between.*	ſuivant,	*according.*
envers,	*towards.*	ſur,	*upon.*
environ,	*about.*	touchant,	*concerning.*
excepté,	*except.*	vers,	*towards.*
hormis,	*except, but.*		

Obſerve, that the prepoſitions preceded in French by *à*, *au*, or *aux*, govern the genitive caſe, and that moſt others require the accuſative after them.

Theſe four, *conformément*, according to; *juſqu'à*, as far as; *par raport à*, with reſpect to; *quant à*, as for; govern the dative caſe.

Prepoſitions joined to a Verb.

Many prepoſitions come in Engliſh after a verb, and make a part of its ſignification; ſuch are the following, which are not expreſſed in French:

abattre, *to pull down.*
abandonner, *to give up.*
cacheter, *to ſeal up.*
combler, *to fill up.*
déchirer, *to tear off.*
déraciner, *to root out.*
s'envoler, *to fly away.*
époudrer, *to wipe off.*
s'évanouir, *to faint away.*
expulſer, *to turn out.*
extirper, *to root out,*
ſe lever, *to get up.*
mander, *to ſend for.*
ôter, *to take away.*
paraphraſer, *to comment upon.*
ramener, *to bring back.*
trouver, *to find out.*
monter, *to go up.*
deſcendre, *to go down.*
entrer, *to come in,*
ſortir, *to go out.*
regarder, *to look out.*
chercher, *to look for.*
admirer, *to wonder at.*
attendre, *to wait for.*

VERBS COMPOSED WITH A PREPOSITION.

The Engliſh give to the moſt part of their verbs a ſignification quite oppoſite to the primitive one, by prefixing to them the prepoſition *un* or *diſ*. The French do the ſame, prefixing *dés* to the words which begin with a *vowel* or *h* mute; and *dé* to thoſe which begin with a conſonant. Example:

border,	*to border.*	paver,	*to pave.*
déborder,	*to unborder.*	dépaver,	*to unpave.*
charger,	*to load.*	apprendre,	*to learn.*
décharger,	*to unload.*	déſapprendre,	*to unlearn.*
faire,	*to do,*	habiller,	*to dreſs.*
défaire,	*to undo.*	déſhabiller,	*to undreſs.*

friſer, *to curl.*
défriſer, *to uncurl.*
lacer, *to lace.*
délacer, *to unlace.*
lier, *to tie.*
délier, *to untie.*
conter, *to count.*
déconter, *to diſcount.*
ſe fier, *to truſt.*
ſe défier, *to diſtruſt.*
couvrir, *to cover.*
découvrir, *to diſcover.*
plaire, *to pleaſe.*
déplaire, *to diſpleaſe.*
poſſéder, *to poſſeſs.*
dépoſſéder, *to diſpoſſeſs.*
tromper, *to deceive.*
détromper, *to undeceive.*
voiler, *to veil.*
dévoiler, *to unveil.*
tordre, *to twiſt.*
détordre, *to untwiſt.*
approuver, *to approve.*
déſapprouver, *to diſapprove.*
armer, *to arm.*
déſarmer, *to diſarm.*
honorer, *to honour.*
déſhonorer, *to diſhonour.*
obéir, *to diſobey.*
déſobéir, *to diſobey.*
unir, *to unite.*
déſunir, *to diſunite.*

The Engliſh put the word *again* after a verb, to expreſs the reiteration of a thing. The French expreſs the reiteration by prefixing the prepoſition *re* to the verb, when it begins with a conſonant, and *r* only when it begins with a vowel or *h* mute. Thus we ſay,

appeller, *to call.*
rappeller, *to call again.*
cacheter, *to ſeal up.*
recacheter, *to ſeal up again.*
compoſer, *to compoſe.*
recompoſer, *to compoſe, &c.*
demander, *to aſk.*
redemander, *to aſk again.*
faire, *to do.*
refaire, *to do again.*
embarquer, *to imbark,*
rembarquer, *to imbark, &c.*
méſurer, *to meaſure.*
reméſurer, *to meaſure, &c.*
lire, *to read.*
relire, *to read again.*
paroître, *to appear.*
reparoître, *to appear, &c.*
pliſſer, *to plait.*
repliſſer, *to plait again.*
prendre, *to take.*
reprendre, *to take again.*
tomber, *to fall.*
retomber, *to fall again.*
trouver, *to find.*
retrouver, *to find again.*
vendre, *to ſell.*
revendre, *to ſell again.*
venir, *to come.*
revenir, *to come again.*

There are many other prepoſitions which come immediately after a verb in Engliſh, and change its ſignification; ſuch are, *away, back, upon, out, for, with, off*, &c. but theſe cannot be reduced to rules, and can be learned by practice only.

OF CONJUNCTIONS.

Conjunctions are indeclinable words, uſed in a ſentence to join together the different parts of ſpeech. Example:

Parlez peu et *penſez bien, ſi vous voulez qu'on vous regarde* comme *un homme d'eſprit*;

Speak little *and* think much, *if* you would be looked upon *as* a man of ſenſe.

In this ſentence, *et, ſi,* and *comme*, are three conjunctions, which ſhew the dependency and conjunction of the words which compoſe it.

Conjunctions are ſimple or compound; the ſimple conſiſt of one word, as *et, ou, auſſi, ni,* &c.; the compound are formed of two or more words, ſuch as, *afin que, au lieu que, ſi ce n'eſt que.* Both ſimple and compound may be divided into *ten ſpecies*, called,

1. Copulative, as *et* and, *comme* as, *deſorte que*, ſo that, &c.
2. Diſjunctive, as *ou* or, *ou bien* elſe, *ni* neither, &c.
3. Adverſative, as *néanmoins* nevertheleſs, &c.
4. Conditional, as *ſi* if, *pourvu que* provided, &c.
5. Conceſſive, as *d'accord* granted, *en effet* really, &c.
6. Comparative, as *auſſi bien que* as well as, &c.
7. Cauſal, as *parceque* becauſe, &c.
8. Interrogative, as *pourquoi* why, *quand* when, &c.
9. Continuative, as *de plus* moreover, *encore* yet, &c.
10. Concluding, as *donc* therefore, *ainſi* thus, &c.

The above explanation being too abſtract for many young ſtudents, I will diſpoſe the conjunctions in three alphabetical ſeries. *The firſt* contains the conjunctions which govern the infinitive mood; *the ſecond* enumerates thoſe which govern the ſubjunctive; and *the third* comprehends all others.

1. *Conjunctions which govern the Infinitive.*

Afin de,	*in order to.*	de peur de,	*for fear of.*
à moins de,	*unleſs.*	faute de,	*for want of.*

avant de,	*before.*	juſqu'à,	*till.*
aulieu de,	*inſtead of.*	plutôt que de,	*rather than.*
loin de,	*far from.*	pour,	*for.*
de crainte de,	*for fear of.*	ſans,	*without.*

2. *Conjunctions which govern the Subjunctive.*

Afin que,	*that.*	malgré que,	*for all that.*
à moins que,	*unleſs.*	non obſtant que,	*for all that.*
avant que,	*before.*	non pas que,	*not that,*
au cas que,	*in caſe that.*	poſé que,	*ſuppoſe that.*
bien que,	*though.*	pourvu que,	*provided.*
de crainte que,	*for fear.*	quoique,	*though.*
de peur que,	*leſt.*	ſans que,	*without.*
en cas que,	*if.*	ſoit que,	*whether.*
encore que,	*though.*	ſuppoſé que,	*ſuppoſe that.*
juſqu'à ce que,	*till.*	dieu veuille que,	*God grant.*
loin que,	*far from.*	pourque,	*that.*

3. *Conjunctions which govern neither the Infinitive nor the Subjunctive.*

A cauſe que,	*becauſe.*	durant que,	*during.*
à condition que,	*provided.*	et,	*and.*
ainſi,	*thus.*	en effet,	*indeed.*
ainſi que,	*as.*	enfin,	*in ſhort.*
à la vérité,	*indeed.*	enſuite,	*afterwards.*
après que,	*after.*	joint à cela,	*moreover.*
au lieu que,	*whereas.*	lorſque,	*when.*
au moins,	*at leaſt.*	mais,	*but.*
auſſi,	*alſo.*	même,	*even.*
auſſi bien que,	*as well as.*	néanmoins,	*nevertheleſs.*
auſſitôt que,	*as ſoon as.*	ni,	*nor.*
au ſurplus,	*moreover.*	non plus,	*neither.*
autant que,	*as much.*	non ſeulement,	*not only.*
car,	*for.*	ou bien,	*or elſe.*
cependant,	*however.*	ou,	*or.*
c'eſt pourquoi,	*therefore.*	outre,	*beſides.*
comme,	*as.*	outre cela,	*add to that.*
d'abord que,	*as ſoon as.*	parceque,	*becauſe.*
d'ailleurs,	*beſides.*	pendant que,	*while.*

d'autant que,	*whereas.*	pour lors,	*then.*
de ſa ſon que,	*ſo that.*	pourquoi,	*why.*
de puis que,	*ſince.*	pourtant,	*however.*
de plus,	*moreover.*	puis,	*then.*
de ſorte que,	*ſo that.*	puiſque,	*ſince.*
dès que,	*as ſoon as.*	quand,	*when.*
donc,	*then*	quand même,	*although.*
ſelon que,	*according as.*	ſur quoi;	*whereupon.*
ſi;	*if.*	ſur-tout,	*eſpecially.*
ſi bien que,	*ſo that.*	tandis que,	*whilſt.*
ſi ce n'eſt que,	*except that.*	tant que,	*as long as.*
ſinon,	*elſe.*	toutefois,	*however.*
ſitôt que,	*as ſoon as,*	volontiers,	*willingly.*
ſuivant que,	*according as.*		

OBSERVE, that many adverbs become prepoſitions, when they govern a noun, a pronoun, or a verb; as, *marchez devant*, adverb; *marchez devant moi*, prepoſition. Some prepoſitions in their turn become conjunctions, when they are uſed to join different parts of ſpeech, as *faites cela pour moi*, prepoſition; *je le ferai pour vous plaire*, conjunction.

OF INTERJECTIONS.

Interjections are ſome indeclinable words, uſed to expreſs the affections of the mind, either of *joy*, *grief*, *fear*, *averſion*, *deriſion*, *ſurpriſe*, &c.

1. Of joy, as — bon! *well!* vive la joie! *huzza!*
2. Of grief, as — helas! *alas!* ah! *bah!* &c.
3. Of fear, as — ah! *ah!* helas! *alas!* he! *oh!* &c.
4. Of averſion, as — ſi! *fye upon!* ſi donc! *fye upon!*
5. Of deriſion, as — oh! *oh!* zeſt! *pſhaw!*
6. Of ſurpriſe, as — bon Dieu! *good God!* eh! *lack a-day!*
7. Of encouraging, as — allons! *come on!* courage! *cheer up!*
8. To ſtop, as — holà! *hold!* tout beau! *ſoftly!* &c.

PART III.

OF SYNTAX*.

SYNTAX is the regular conſtruction of the different parts of ſpeech, conformably to the rules of grammar, and the genius of a language.

Conſtruction, ſuppoſes three things in every tongue: the *union* of words, their *concord*, and their *diſpoſition*: theſe objects are fully explained in the following Rules, which point out the different genius of each language with accuracy and preciſion.

Syntax is here divided into twenty-four chapters: the chapters are again divided into ſections, when occaſion requires it.

CHAPTER I.

Uſe of the French Articles.

This chapter is divided into *four* ſections: *The firſt* explains the ſeveral circumſtances in which articles are uſed in both languages: *the ſecond* enumerates the caſes in which the arti-

* *The learner muſt not begin the ſecond chapter of the ſyntax, till he underſtands the rules of the firſt; nor the third, before he knows the ſecond; and ſo on for all others. It is alſo proper that he ſhould repeat at leaſt once a week the principal rules which he has already learnt, leſt he ſhould forget them.*

cle is uſed in French, and not in Engliſh: *the third* deſcribes thoſe when, on the contrary, it is uſed in Engliſh and not in French: *the fourth* contains all the circumſtances in which both languages take no article.

SECTION THE FIRST.

Article uſed in French and in Engliſh.

RULE 1. - - - un, une, *a, an.*

The indefinite article (*un*, maſc. *une*, fem. in Engliſh, *a* or *an*) is uſed in both languages before a ſubſtantive ſingular, and not ſpecified. Example:

Un livre, a book. *Une maiſon*, a houſe. *Un ami*, a friend.
L'Angleterre eſt un *pays fertile*; England is *a* fruitful country.

RULE 2. - - - le, la, les, *the.*

The definite article (*le*, maſc. *la*, fem. *les* for the plural of both genders, in Engliſh *the*) is uſed in both languages before a ſubſtantive taken in a particular and ſpecified ſenſe. Example:

Le *cheval que j'ai acheté me coute cher, mais il eſt bon*;
The horſe which I have bought is dear, but he is good.
La *crainte de la mort eſt naturelle aux hommes*;
The fear of death is natural to men.

RULE 3. - - - *a* or *an*, rendered by *la, la, les.*

The Engliſh make uſe of the indefinite article *a* or *an*, before nouns of *meaſure*, *weight*, and *number*, when they want to expreſs how much a thing is worth, or ſold for; the French, on the contrary, uſe the definite article; *le, la, les*, in ſuch caſes. Example:

Meaſure.

Le charbon vaut deux chelins le *boiſſeau*;
Coals are worth two ſhillings *a* buſhel.
J'ai acheté cette dentelle un écu la *verge*;
I have bought that lace for a crown *a* yard.

Weight.

Le beurre ſe vend dix ſols la *livre*.
Butter is ſold for ten pence *a* pound.

Number.

Les œufs valent quinze ſols la *douzaine*.
Eggs are worth fifteen pence *a* dozen.

SECTION THE SECOND.

Article uſed in French and not in Engliſh.

RULE 4. - - *le, la, les,* not *the.*

The definite article (*le, la, les,*) is uſed in French and not in Engliſh, before all ſubſtantives taken in the whole extent of their ſignification. Example:

Les *hommes ſont mortels*; Men are mortal.
La *vertu eſt aimable*; Virtue is amiable.
Dieu hait les *méchans*; God hates ſinners.

The words *men, virtue,* and *ſinners,* are taken in a general ſenſe; becauſe all men are mortal, all virtue is amiable, and God hates all ſinners.

RULE 5. - - - *le, la, les,* not *the.*

The definite article (*le, la, les*) is uſed in French, and not in Engliſh, before the names of Kingdoms, Countries, and Provinces, when they are in the nominative or accuſative caſes, and alſo when they are preceded by a prepoſition. Example:

La *France* & l'*Angleterre ſont deux puiſſans royaumes*;
France and England are two powerful Kingdoms.
J'ai paſſé par l'*Italie*, l'*Allemagne* & la *Ruſſie*;
I have paſſed through Italy, Germany, and Ruſſia.

Theſe nouns uſually take no article, when they are in the genitive caſe, or after the prepoſition *en*. Example*:

Les royaumes de *France* & l'*Angleterre ſont puiſſans.*
J'ai voyagé en *Italie*, en *Allemagne* & en *Ruſſie*.

There are, however, ſome names of Kingdoms and Provinces which take an article in the genitive caſe as well as in other caſes; ſuch are, *le Bengal, le Mexiqué, le Canada, le Poitou, le Mainé, l'Angou*, &c. which make in the genitive *du Bengal, du Mexiqué, du Canada*, &c.

N. B. When the names of Kingdoms and Republics are the ſame as thoſe of their capital towns, they are conſidered as proper names, and as ſuch take no article; of this ſort are, *Naples, Veniſe*, and *Gênes*; thus we ſay, *Veniſe eſt une république*; not *la Veniſe eſt une république*.

RULE 6. - - - *le, la, les*, not *the*.

The definite article (*le, la, les*) is uſed in French and not in Engliſh, before adjectives and poſſeſſive pronouns ſubſtantively uſed. Example:

Le *blanc et* le *noir ſont deux couleurs oppoſées*;
White and black are two oppoſite colours.
Mon livre eſt meilleur que le *vôtre*;
My book is better than yours.

RULE 7. - - - *du, de la, des* - - - - - ſome.

The partitive article (*du* m. ſing. *de la* f. *del'* before a vowel or *h* m. and *des* plur. of both genders) is uſed in French before a ſubſtantive, when we want to expreſs an indeterminat enumber or portion of a thing; this article anſwers to the Engliſh word *ſome*, expreſſed or underſtood. Example:

Donnez moi du *pain*, de la *viande et* des *œufs*;
Give me *ſome* bread, *ſome* meat, and *ſome* eggs.
J'ai acheté du *papier*, de l'*encre* & des *plumes*;
I have bought paper, ink, and pens.

* *Thus, the names of Kingdoms, Provinces, &c. are uſually preceded by* de, *inſtead of* du, de la, *or* des, *when they are in the genitive or ablative caſes.*

RULE 8. - - - *de* inſtead of *du, de la, des.*

If a ſubſtantive, taken in a partitive ſenſe as before, is preceded in French by an adjective, the prepoſition *de* is uſed for both genders and numbers, inſtead of the partitive article (*du, de la, des*). Example *:

Donnez moi de *bon pain,* de *bonne viande* & de *bons œufs.*
J'ai acheté de *mauvais papier* & de *mauvaiſe encre.*

N. B. Every time the words *ſome* or *any*, are, or can be uſed in Engliſh before a ſubſtantive, the partitive article *du, de la, des*, or the prepoſition *de*, muſt be uſed in French according to the diſtinction of the two preceding rules.

RULE 9. - - - *Where the Article is required.*

Every noun which is *the nominative*, or *the caſe* of a verb, muſt have in French one of the three articles, *definite, indefinite*, or *partitive*, of which before. Example :

L'*or et* l'*argent ne ſauroient rendre* l'*homme heureux* ;
Gold and ſilver cannot render man happy.
L'*Eſpagne produit* du *vin*, des *oranges* & des *olives* ;
Spain produces wine, oranges, and olives.

N. B. I do not comprehend in this rule the proper names of perſons and towns, the ſubſtantives preceded by a pronoun, nor an adjective of number, neither of which have any article, as we ſhall ſee in the rules 14th and 15th.

RULE 10. - - - *Repetition of the Articles.*

The articles are repeated in French before every ſubſtantive, and agree with them in gender and number ; in Engliſh on the contrary, they are indeclinable. Example :

Le *génie de la langue Françoiſe conſiſte dans* la *clarté*, la *pureté*, l'*élégance* & la *force*.
The genius of the French tongue conſiſts in clearneſs, purity, elegance, and ſtrength.
J'ai acheté de la *viande*, du *fromage et*, des *fruits* ;
I have bought meat, cheeſe, and fruits.

* *I call the words* de *and* à *prepoſitions, and not articles, as ſome Grammarians do, who by multiplying the articles, have increaſed the difficulties, and confuſed the matter altogether.*

SECTION THE THIRD.

Articles uſed in Engliſh and not in French.

RULE 11. - - - *the*, not *le, la, les*.

The definitive article (*the*) is uſed in Engliſh, and not in French, before the ordinal numbers, *the firſt, the ſecond, the third, the fourth*, &c. uſed in quotations. Example:

Livre premier, chapitre ſix, ſection neuvième;
Book *the* firſt, chapter *the* ſixth, ſection *the* ninth.

No article is uſed in French before the ordinal numbers, which come after the Chriſtian names of ſovereigns. Example:

Charles premier, Philippe ſecond, George trois;
Charles *the* firſt, Philip *the* ſecond, George *the* third*.

RULE 12. - - - *a*, not *un* or *une*.

The indefinite article (*a* or *an*) is uſed in Engliſh, and not in French, before nouns which expreſs the *titles, profeſſions, trade, country*, or any other attribute of the ſubſtantive antecedent. Example:

Mon père étoit noble;	My father was *a* noble man.
Votre frère eſt medecin;	Your brother is *a* phyſician.
Etes-vous François?	Are you *a* French man?

RULE 13. - - - *a*, not *un* or *une*.

The indefinite article (*a* or *an*) is alſo uſed in Engliſh, and not in French, in the four following caſes:

1. Before a ſubſtantive uſed in oppoſition to another. Example:

Le Roi fut réçu en triomphe, honneur qu'il méritoit bien;
The King was received in triumph, *an* honour he deſerved.

* *Obſerve, by the preceding examples, that the ordinal numbers (the two firſt excepted) are rendered in French by the Cardinal, before the names of Sovereigns, and alſo often in quotations.*

2. Before a ſubſtantive, which ſpecifies or explains the the things ſpoken of. Example:

J'ai lu aujourd'hui l'Empreſſé, comédie eſtimée;
I have read to-day the Buſy Body, *an* eſteemed comedy.

3. In the title of a book, or of any performance. Example:

Grammaire ſur la langue Françoiſe;
A grammar on the French tongue.

4. After the word *what*, uſed to expreſs ſurpriſe. Example:

Quel bruit vous faites!
What *a* noiſe you make!

SECTION THE FOURTH.

No Article uſed in French nor in Engliſh.

RULE 14. - - - *No Article in either Language.*

No article is uſed in French or Engliſh before the word *God* (*Dieu*), nor before the proper names of Heathen Deities; of *men*, *women*, *towns*, *villages*, *days*, or *months*. Example:

Dieu eſt preſent par-tout; God is preſent every where*.
Cicéron et Démoſthènes étoient deux grands orateurs;
Cicero and Demoſthenes were two great orators.
Londres et Paris ſont deux grandes capitales;
London and Paris are two capital Cities.
Jupiter et Venus étoient des Divinités Payennes;
Jupiter and Venus were Heathen Divinities.

Some (but few) proper names of perſons take an article in French, ſuch are, *l'Arioſte, le Taſſe, l'Aretin, le Titien*, &c. Some names of towns take alſo an article; ſuch are, *la Haie, l'Aigle, la Rochelle, le Havre, le Maine*, &c.

* *The definite article ſhould be uſed before the proper names, if they were in the plural or particulariſed. Example:* le Dieu des Chrétiens eſt tout-puiſſant. Les Cicérons ſont rares.

RULE 15. - - - *No Article in either Language.*

No article is uſed in French or in Engliſh, before a ſubſtantive preceded by any pronoun whatever. Example:

Mon ami viendra demain; my friend will come to-morrow.
Cette maiſon eſt neuve; this houſe is new.
Quelle heure eſt-il à preſent? what's o'clock now?

N. B. The definite article (*le, la, les*) is uſed in French before the cardinal numbers *un, deux, trois, quatre*, &c. when they are ſubſtantively uſed, or followed by a relative pronoun, but not in other caſes; thus we ſay, with an article, *rendez-moi* les *vingt livres que je vous prêtai* le *dix de Mars*; Return me the twenty pounds I lent you the tenth of March; and without article. *Prêtez-moi vingt guinées*; lend me twenty guineas.

RULE 16. - - - *The Prepoſition* de.

No article (but the prepoſition *de*) is uſed in French after the words *eſpece, ſorte, genre, mélange*, or any other of the ſame ſignification. Example:

L'homme eſt ſujet à toutes ſortes d'*infirmités*;
Man is expoſed to all ſorts of infirmities.
La jalouſie eſt un mélange d'*amour et* de *haine*, de *crainte et* de *déſeſpoir*.
Jealouſy is a mixture of love and hatred, of fear and deſpair.

RULE 17. - - - *The Prepoſition* de.

No article (but the prepoſition *de*) is uſed before the latter of two ſubſtantives, when it expreſſes the *nature, matter, ſpecies, quality*, or *country* of the firſt. Example:

Un mal de *tête, un mal* de *dent*; a head-ach, a tooth-ach,
Une montre d'*or, des bas* de *ſoie*; a gold-watch, ſilk-ſtockings.
De la laine d'*Eſpagne, du vin* de *Bourgogne*;
Spaniſh wool, Burgundy wine.

RULE 18. - - - *The Prepoſition* de.

No article (but the prepoſition *de*) is uſed in French after the following words of quantity, ſcarcity, or excluſion:

abondance, plenty; *aſſez*, enough; *autant*, as much; *beaucoup*, much; *combien*, how many; *nombre*, number; *jamais*, never; *moins*, leſs; *pas* or *point*, no; *peu*, little; *plus*, more; *quantité*, quantity; *rien*, nothing; *tant*, ſo many; *trop*, too much. Example:

Vous avez beaucoup d'*eſprit*; you have much wit.
Il n'a point de *prudence*; he has no prudence.
Vous faites trop de *bruit*; you make too much noiſe.
Je n'ai que peu d'*argent*; I have but little money.

Note 1. The words *que* and *quoi*, uſed in a ſentence of admiration, are alſo followed by *de*. Example:

Que de *chagrins!* how many ſorrows!
Quoi de *plus triſte!* what more ſad!

Note 2. The word *bien* is always followed by an article, and *beaucoup* is never. Example:

Il a bien des *amis*, *il a beaucoup* d'*amis*;
He has a great many friends.

RULE 19. - - - *The Prepoſition* de.

No article (but the prepoſition *de*) is uſed in French.

1. After an adjective, which governs the genitive caſe. Example:

Vous êtes digne de *louanges*; you are praiſe-worthy.
La vie humaine eſt pleine de *revers*;
Human life is full of diſappointments.

2. After the verbs and participles which are followed in Engliſh by the word *with*, whether this prepoſition be expreſſed in French by *de* or *avec*. Example:

Vous êtes bouffi d'*orgueil*; you are puffed up with pride.
Empliſſez la bouteille de *vin*; fill up the bottle with wine.

No article is uſed in either language after a verb followed by a noun, which forms but one idea with it; which is known when they are or could be expreſſed by one word in Engliſh, as in the following examples:

Avoir pitié des malheureux; to pity the unfortunate.
Porter envie au bonheur d'*autrui*;
To envy the happineſs of others.
Rendre viſite à un ami; to viſit a friend.

The article is not uſed after the prepoſitions *ſans*, *avec*, or *par*, when the noun following is at the end of a ſentence, or is not ſpecified. Example:

Vous parlez avec *élégance*; you ſpeak elegantly.

A vaincre ſans *péril, on triomphe* ſans *gloire*;

To vanquiſh without danger, is to triumph without glory.

J'ai voyagé par *terre* & par *mer*;

I have travelled by land and ſea.

The nouns mentioned in the ſix rules of this ſection ſhould take an article in French when uſed in a particular ſenſe.

CHAPTER II.

SYNTAX OF SUBSTANTIVES.

RULE 20. - - - *Two Subſtantives in the ſame Caſe.*

When there is a conjunction between two nouns, they muſt be put in the ſame caſe; and if a ſubſtantive is preceded by a prepoſition, that prepoſition is uſually repeated in French before all others governed by it. Example:

Votre conſeil plut au *roi*, au *miniſtre*, *et* au *parlement*;

Your advice pleaſed the king, the miniſter, and the parliament.

Un homme ſans religion eſt dans un état de *doute* & de *confuſion*, de *crainte* & de *défiance*.

A man without religion is in a ſtate of doubt and confuſion, fear and diſtruſt.

RULE 21. - - - *The latter of two Subſtantives is put in the Genitive.*

The latter of two ſubſtantives is generally put in the genitive caſe in French, whether it is in the genitive or dative in Engliſh. Example:

Les impies ſont ennemis de la *vertu*;

Impious men are enemies *to* virtue.

Le chien eſt l'ami de l'*homme*; the dog is a friend *to* man.

RULE 22. - - - *Tranſpoſition of Words.*

The Engliſh often make a tranpoſition of words, and place the genitive caſe the firſt; this tranſpoſition is not allowed in French, and the order muſt be reverſed; thus we ſay,

Les gardes du roi; the king's guards.
Une fille de chambre; a chambermaid.
La colère de Diane cauſa la mort d'Acteon;
Diana's anger was Acteon's death.

RULE 23.

When two ſubſtantives make a compound word in Engliſh, the firſt is put the ſecond in French, and is preceded by *a* the prepoſition *à* when it expreſſes the uſe of the other; as,

de la poudre à canon, gunpowder.
des armes à feu, fire-arms.
une ſalle à manger, a dining-room.

It is preceded by *au*, *à la*, or *aux*, when it ſignifies ſomething proper to drink, or to eat; as,

appellèz la femme aux *huitres*; call the oyſter-woman.
où eſt l'homme aux *lapins*? where is the rabbit-man?

RULE 24. - - - *A Noun collective general.*

A noun collective general (that is to ſay, repreſenting the whole object) ſuch as the words *peuple*, *nation*, *armée*, *flotte*, &c. requires that the *adjectives*, *pronouns*, and *verbs* to which it has reference ſhould be always in the ſingular. Example:

La grande armée Françoiſe fut *entièrement* défaite;
The great French army was totally defeated.
Toute la flotte eſt *en mer*, elle partit *hier matin*;
The whole fleet is at ſea, it ſet ſail yeſterday morning.

RULE 25. - - - *A Noun collective partitive.*

A noun collective partitive, (that is, which repreſents only a part of the whole object) ſuch as, *foule*, *nombre*, *multitude*, &c. followed by a genitive plural, governs the verb and the pronoun in the ſingular, if it is preceded by a definite article; but if not, it governs them in the plural. Example:

La multitude des étrangers rend *le pain cher*;—ſingular.
The multitude of foreigners make bread dear.

Une multitude de chrétiens s'égarent *tous les jours*;—plural.
A multitude of Chriſtians are led aſtray every day.

The reaſon of this difference is, that the collective is a ſubſtantive when preceded by *le, la, les,* and a kind of adjective when not; in the firſt caſe the verb agrees with the collective, and in the ſecond with the ſubſtantive which comes after the collective.

N. B. The verb is always put in the plural after the words *la plupart, beaucoup, nombre,* unleſs they are followed by a ſubſtantive ſingular. Example: *la plupart le* croient; *la plupart du monde* le croit.

CHAPTER III.

SYNTAX OF ADJECTIVES*.

This Chapter, for the ſake of order and perſpicuity, is divided into four ſections. *The firſt* explains the concord and the right placing of adjectives; *the ſecond* treats of their government; *the third* has for object the adjectives of dimenſion; and *the fourth* comprehends whatever concerns the conſtruction of comparatives and ſuperlatives.

SECTION THE FIRST.

Of the Concord and right Poſition of Adjectives.

RULE 25. - - - *All Adjectives are declinable.*

All adjectives are declinable in French, and agree in gender and number with the ſubſtantive to which they are joined

* *See how to form the feminine of adjectives, pages* 39 *and* 40; *their plural is formed from the ſingular, like that of ſubſtantives, of which before, page* 36.

or relative; in Engliſh, on the contrary, they are all indeclinable. Example:

Un homme pieux; *une femme* pieuſe; *des filles* pieuſes;
A *pious* man; a *pious* woman; *pious* girls.
Ce tableau me coute cher, mais il eſt beau;
This picture coſt me dear, but it is *fine*.
Cette maiſon me coute cher, mais auſſi elle eſt belle;
This houſe coſt me dear, but it is *fine*.

RULE 27. - - - *Adjectives agree with the laſt Subſtantive.*

When an adjective or a participle refer to ſeveral ſubſtantives ſingular, we put them in the plural, if they are ſeparated from the ſubſtantive by any verb; and in the ſingular if they are not. Example:

La porte & la fenêtre étoient fermées;—plural.
The door and the window were *ſhut*.
J'ai trouvé la porte & la fenêtre fermée;—ſingular.
I have found the door and the window *ſhut*.

The reaſon of this difference is, that in the firſt caſe the adjectives agree with both ſubſtantives; and in the ſecond it agrees with the laſt only.

RULE 28. - - - *Adjectives agree with the moſt worthy Gender.*

When an adjective comes immediately after a verb, it is always put in the plural feminine, if it refers to ſeveral ſubſtantives feminine, but if they are both maſc. or of different genders, it is put in the plural maſculine, becauſe it then agrees with the moſt worthy gender. Example:

Son courage et ſa hardieſſe me paroiſſent étonnans;—*pl. m.*
His courage and boldneſs ſeem *aſtoniſhing* to me.
Votre mère et votre ſœur ſont ſavantes;—*pl. f.*
Your mother and ſiſter are *learned*.
Mon frère et ma ſœur ſont morts, *not ſont mortes*.
My brother and ſiſter are dead.

RULE 29. - - - *Where Adjectives ought to be placed.*

When two or more adjectives refer to the ſame ſubſtantive, they uſually follow it in French, and come before in Engliſh;

a conjunction muſt be put in French before the laſt adjective, though ſometimes left out in Engliſh. Example:

Un homme ingénieux et ſenſible; an ingenious ſenſible man.
Un livre long et ennuyeux; a long tedious book.
Une femme ſage et vertueuſe; a wiſe virtuous woman.
Un prince jeune et liberal; a young liberal prince.

RULE 30. - - - *Adjectives placed before the Subſtantive.*

The adjectives, *beau*, fine; *bon*, good; *grand*, great; *gros*, big; *jeune*, young; *mauvais*, bad; *méchant*, wicked; *meilleur*, better; *moindre*, leſs; *petit*, little; *ſaint*, holy; *vieux*, old; thoſe of number, and all the *poſſeſſive*, *demonſtrative*, or *indeterminate* pronouns (which ſome grammarians conſider as mere adjectives) precede in French as in Engliſh the ſubſtantive to which they are joined. Example:

Nous avons perdu un grand *Général dans cette guerre*;
We have loſt a *great* General in this war.
Les jeunes *gens croient qu'ils vivront long-temps*;
Young men believe they ſhall live long.

Note 1. The adjective *cher*, dear, comes before the ſubſtantive, when it denotes affection, as *mon cher père*, *ma chere mère*; my dear father, my dear mother; and after when it denotes the price of a thing. Example: un livre *cher*, a dear book; une maiſon *chere*, a dear houſe.

Note 2. We ſay *un grand homme*, for a great man, and *un homme grand*, for a tall man; *une groſſe femme*, for a fat woman, and *une femme groſſe*, for a woman with child; *une ſage femme*, for a midwife; and *une femme ſage*, for a modeſt or wiſe woman; *un galant homme*, for a man of honour, and *un homme galant*, for a courtier.

RULE 31. - - - *Adjectives placed after the Subſtantive.*

The adjectives not mentioned in the preceding rule are uſually placed in French after the ſubſtantive which they qualify; in Engliſh, on the contrary, they are always placed before. Example:

Les perſonnes réconnoiſſantes *reſſemblent à des terres* fertiles, *qui donnent plus qu'elles ne reçoivent*;

Grateful people are like thoſe *fruitful* lands, which give more than they receive.

Le bien public *eſt préférable à l'intérêt* particulier;
Public good is preferable to *private* intereſt.

Note. Adjectives which expreſs ſome moral qualities may ſometimes be placed before or after the ſubſtantive; we can ſay, for inſtance, *un ami fidel*, or *un fidel ami*, a faithful friend; but this is not often the caſe, therefore I adviſe the learner to put them after.

Obſerve, We always put after the ſubſtantives, 1. The adjectives derived from verbs: as, *une penſée* embrouillée *eſt un diamant couvert de boue*. 2. Thoſe of figure or colour, as *une table* ronde, *un habit* noir. 3. Thoſe which end in *ique eſque, ile, ule*, or *able*, as *un eſprit* pacifique, *une figure* groteſque, *un diſcour* puérile, *une femme* crédule. 4. Thoſe of nations, as, *la conſtitution* Angloiſe. 5. Thoſe which can be ſubſtantively uſed, and in general all thoſe not mentioned in Rule 30.

SECTION THE SECOND.

Of the Government of Adjectives.

RULE 32. - - - *Adjectives which govern the Genitive Caſe.*

Adjectives and participles which denote *plenty* or *ſcarcity*, thoſe which can be ſubſtantively uſed, and in general all thoſe which are followed in Engliſh, by the prepoſitions *of, from, with*, or *by*, govern in French the genitive or ablative caſe. Example:

Je ſuis privé de *tout*; I am deprived of every thing.
La Reine eſt comblée d'*honneur*;
The Queen is loaded with honour.
Vos ſœurs ſont arrivées de *France*;
Your ſiſters are arrived from France.

RULE 33. - - - *Adjectives which govern the Dative.*

Adjectives which denote *aptneſs, fitneſs, inclination, eaſe, readineſs*, or *any habit*, govern in French the noun in the

dative caſe, and moſt commonly the verb in the infinitive with *à*. Example:

Il eſt propre à *tout*; he is fit for any thing.
Cela eſt facile à *dire*; that is eaſy to ſay.
Un eſprit troublé n'eſt pas propre à *remplir ſon devoir*;
A diſturbed mind is not fit to diſcharge its duties.

Some adjectives govern the dative in French, and the genitive in Engliſh, ſuch are *attentif à*, heedful of; *ſenſible à*, ſenſible of; *inſenſible à*, inſenſible of. Example: *Je ſuis ſenſible* à *vos bontés*, I am ſenſible *of* your kindneſſes.

RULE 34. - - - *Adjectives followed by* à *or* envers.

Some adjectives are followed in French by the prepoſition *à*, and in Engliſh by the prepoſition *in*; ſuch are, *curieux à*, curious in; *exact à*, preciſe in; *habile à*, ſkilful in; *patient à*, patient in; *zélé à*, zealous in. Example:

Vous êtes habile à *tout faire*;
You are ſkilful *in* doing every thing.
Je ſuis exact à *mes engagemens*;
I am preciſe *in* my engagements.

Some others are often followed in French by the prepoſition *envers*, and in Engliſh by the prepoſition *to*; ſuch are, *affable envers*, affable to; *bon envers*, good to; *cruel envers*, cruel to; *poli envers*, civil to. Example:

Il faut être poli envers *tout le monde*;
We muſt be civil to every body.

SECTION THE THIRD.

Adjectives of Dimenſion.

RULE 35. - - - *de haut* or *de hauteur*, high.

The adjectives of dimenſion can be rendered in French by an adjective, or by a ſubſtantive; thus *high* can be expreſſed by *de haut*, or *de hauteur*; *long*, by *de long* or *de longueur*; *broad*, by *de large* or *de largeur*; *deep*, muſt be expreſſed by

de profondeur, not by *de profond*, and in general the ſubſtantive is more elegantly uſed than the adjective.

You muſt remember always to put the prepoſition *de* before the words of dimenſion and of number, if they are not preceded by a verb. Example:

Une tour de *deux cens pied* de *haut*, *ou* de *hauteur*;
A tower two hundred feet high.
Une table de *ſix pieds* de *long*, *ou* de *longueur*;
A table ſix feet long.
Une rivière de *vingt pieds* de *profondeur*, *not* de *profond*;
A river twenty feet deep.

RULE 36. - - - avoir *inſtead of* to be, *before the Adjectives of Dimenſion.*

To expreſs the *height*, *depth*, or *breadth* of an object, the Engliſh make uſe of the verb *to be*, and the French of the verb *avoir*, as they always do before a word of number.

N. B. The prepoſition *de* is left out after the verb *avoir*, but it remains before the word of dimenſion. Example:

Cette tour a *deux cens pieds* de *hauteur*;
This tower *is* two hundred feet high.
Cette table a *ſix pieds* de *longueur*, that table *is* ſix feet long.
Cette rivière a *vingt pieds* de *profondeur*;
That river *is* twenty feet deep.

SECTION THE FOURTH.

Of Comparatives and Superlatives.*

RULE 37. - - - as *expreſſed by* que, *after a Comparative.*

The word *as*, uſed in Engliſh after a comparative of *equality* or *inferiority*, is always expreſſed in French by *que*, and never by *comme*. Example:

* *See, page* 41, *how many ſorts of comparatives and ſuperlatives, and how to form them from adjectives.*

Vous êtes auſſi riche que *moi*; you are as rich *as* I am.
Je ne ſuis pas ſi ſavant que *vous*; I am not ſo learned *as* you.
J'ai autant de livres qu'*eux*;
I have as many books *as* they have.
And not *J'ai autant de livres* comme *eux*; nor *je ne ſuis pas ſi ſavant* comme *vous*.

RULE 38. - - - by, *expreſſed by* de, *after a Comparative.*

The word *by*, which is often uſed after a comparative, to denote how much a thing exceeds another, is always expreſſed by *de*, and never by *par*. Example:
Je ſuis plus grand que vous de *toute ta tête*, not *par*;
I am taller than you *by* the whole head.
Vous êtes plus jeune que moi de *quatre ans*, not *par*;
You are younger than I am *by* four years.

RULE 39. - - - than, *expreſſed by* que *or* de, *after a Comparative.*

The word *than*, uſed after a comparative, is expreſſed by *que*, when it is followed by a noun or a pronoun. Example:
L'Aſie eſt plus grande que *l'Europe*;
Aſia is greater *than* Europe.
Il eſt plus heureux que *vous*; he is more fortunate *than* you.

The word *than* is always expreſſed by *de* before the cardinal numbers *un*, *deux*, *trois*, &c. becauſe, there is then no compariſon of objects. Example:
J'ai plus de *quinze ans*; I am more *than* fifteen years of age.
Vous avez plus de *cent guinées*;
You have more *than* a hundred guineas.
Not *J'ai plus que quinze ans*; nor *vous avez plus que cent guinées*.

RULE 40. - - - than, *expreſſed by* que de, *or* que ne, *after a Comparative.*

The word *than*, uſed in comparatives, is uſually expreſſed by *que de* before an infinitive mood, and by *que ne* before a verb in the indicative. Example:

Il eſt plus noble de pardonner que de *ſe venger*;
It is more noble to forgive *than* to revenge.
Les richeſſes ſont plus dangereuſes que *la pauvrete* n'*eſt incommode*;
Riches are more dangerous *than* poverty is troubleſome.

Note 1. If the firſt infinitive is preceded by the prepoſition *à*, then the word *than* is expreſſed by *qu'à*. Example: *Il eſt plus diſpoſé à vous nuire* qu'à *vous obliger*. He is more inclined to hurt *than* to oblige you.

Note 2. The word *than* is expreſſed by *que* only, before an indicative mood, if there is a conjunction between the word *than* and the verb. Example:
Vous apprenez mieux que *quand vous étiez en France*;
You learn better *than* when you were in France.
Mon frère ſe rétablit plutôt que *s'il étoit à la ville*;
My brother recovers ſooner *than* if he was in town.

RULE 41. - - - The more *is expreſſed by* plus, *and not by* le plus.

The Engliſh make uſe of the definite article before the comparatives of proportion, and the French never: thus, *the more* is expreſſed by *plus*, *the leſs* by *moins*, and not by *le plus*, or *le moins*, which are uſed only in ſuperlatives. Example:
Plus *vous étudierez*, plus *vous profiterez*, not *le plus*;
The more you will ſtudy, *the more* you will improve.
Plus *je connois les hommes*, moins *j'eſtime la vie*;
The more I know mankind, *the leſs* I value life.
Not *le plus je connois les hommes*, *le moins j'eſtime la vie*.

RULE 42. - - - The more *is expreſſed by* plus, *and* the leſs *by* moins.

If a comparative of proportion is made with two ſubſtantives or two adjectives, they are placed before the verb in Engliſh, and after in French.

The words of this ſort of ſentences are diſpoſed in the following order:—1. We put *plus* or *moins*. 2. The nominative of the verb. 3. The verb. 4. The adjective or ſubſtantive; the reſt as in Engliſh. Example:

Plus *une choſe eſt difficile*, plus *elle eſt honorable*;
The more difficult a thing is, *the more* honourable.
Moins *il gagne d'argent*, plus *il fait de dépenſe*;
The leſs money he gets, *the more* expences he incurs.

In theſe and the like ſort of ſentences, the ſubſtantive is preceded by *de*, and the adjective is not.

RULE 43. - - - The Superlative governs the Genitive and the Subjunctive.

The ſuperlative always governs, in French, the noun following in the genitive caſe, and the verb in the ſubjunctive mood. Example:

La France eſt la plus grande république d'Europe—*gen.*
France is the greateſt republic *in Europe.*
Vous êtes la Dame la plus aimable que je connoiſſe—*ſubj.*
You are the moſt accompliſhed Lady *I know.*

RULE 44. - - - Of the Superlative.

If the ſubſtantive precedes the ſuperlative, both take the definite article *le, la, les*; but the ſuperlative alone takes an article, if it precedes the ſubſtantive. Example:

La compagnie la *plus agréable eſt rarement* la *meilleure compagnie*;
The moſt pleaſing company is ſeldom the beſt company.
Voilà la *plus belle promenade*, ou *la promenade* la *plus belle*;
This is the moſt beautiful walk.

Note 1. The comparatives and ſuperlatives agree in gender and number with the ſubſtantive or pronoun to which they refer, as you may obſerve from the preceding examples.

Note 2. *Le* is indeclinable before *plus* and *moins* followed by an adverb, and alſo by an adjective, when there is no compariſon of objects. Example:

Nous devons parler *le plus* clairement qu'il nous eſt poſſible; and not *les plus clairement*—adv.

Nous ne pleurons pas toujours quand nous ſommes *le plus* affligés; and not *les plus affligés*—adj.

CHAPTER IV.

Of Perſonal and Imperſonal Pronouns.

This Chapter is divided into five ſections: *the firſt* enumerates the circumſtances in which the perſonal pronouns are conjunctive or disjunctive, and ſhews how to expreſs them in both caſes: *the ſecond* treats of the imperſonal pronouns *it*, *they*, or *them*, which are uſed in Engliſh with reference to animals or things: *the third* aſcribes to the perſonal and imperſonal pronouns their proper place in a ſentence, and explains the order in which they muſt be diſpoſed, when they meet together: *the fourth* teaches when the pronouns are or not to be repeated before the verb which they govern or are governed by: *the fifth* informs us when the pronouns muſt be expreſſed by *lui* or *ſoi*, and ſhews their difference with accuracy and preciſion.

SECTION THE FIRST.

When the Perſonal Pronouns are Conjunctive or Disjunctive.*

RULE 45. - - - *Perſonal Pronouns in the Nominative Caſe.*

The perſonal pronouns *I, thou, he, ſhe, we, you, they*, are *conjunctive*, and expreſſed by *je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles*, when they are the nominative caſe of a verb, provided they are not joined to another noun or pronoun by a conjunction. Example:

Je lis tu parles, il doit, elle vient, nous avons.
I read, thou ſpeakeſt, he owes, ſhe comes, we have, &c.

* *I beg the Reader to remember, that I call* perſonal pronouns, *not only thoſe which are the nominative of a verb,* (as M. Porny does) *but with* M. M. Wailly, Chambaud, *and* Perrin, *all thoſe which have a reference to perſons; thus,* je, moi, *and* me,

Obſerve, to uſe always *il* or *ils*, with reference to a noun maſculine, and *elle* or *elles* with reference to a feminine; thus, *they are rich*, is expreſſed in French by *ils ſont riches*, ſpeaking of men; and by *elles ſont riches*, ſpeaking of women.

The ſame pronouns are *disjunctive*, and expreſſed by *moi, toi, lui, elle, nous, vous, eux*, or *elles*, under the following circumſtances:

1. When they come before the word *qui*, or after the words *que* or *ſeul*. Example:

C'eſt moi qui *le dis*; it is I who ſay ſo; not *c'eſt je*.
Il eſt plus ſavant que moi; he is more learned than I.
Je ſuis plus jeune que lui; I am younger than he.
Eux *ſeuls y étoient preſents*; they alone were preſent there.

2. When they are uſed in anſwer to a queſtion. Example:

Qui a fait cela? C'eſt moi, *c'eſt* lui, *ce ſont* eux.
Who has done that? I, he, they.

3. When they are joined to other nouns or pronouns by a conjunction. Example:

Mon frère et moi *nous apprenons le François*;
We learn French, my brother and I.

4. When they come before a noun, or a verb uſed in oppoſition to or diſtinction from the firſt. Example:

Vous aimez l'étude, et moi *le jeu*;
You like ſtudy, and I gaming.
Vous reviendrez à la ville et moi *j'irai à la campagne*;
You will return to town, and *I* will go into the country.

Obſerve, that in the two laſt inſtances the verb takes in French a perſonal pronoun of the plural, and of the moſt worthy perſon for its nominative caſe, beſides thoſe uſed in Engliſh.

are perſonal pronouns of the firſt perſon ſingular; tu, toi, *and* te, *of the ſecond*; il, lui, *or* elle, *of the third. Of perſonal pronouns, ſome are conjunctive, and ſome disjunctive; the firſt takes no article or prepoſition before them, as you may ſee in page* 48. *The ſecond, on the contrary, takes the prepoſition* de *in the genitive, and* à *in the dative. Their conſtruction is fully explained in the following rules.*

RULE 46. - - - *Perſonal Pronoun in the Genitive Caſe.*

When the perſonal pronouns are in the genitive caſe, they are *disjunctive*, and expreſſed by *de moi, de toi, de lui, d'elle, de nous, de vous, d'eux, d'elles.* Example:

Il ſe plaint de moi, *je ne parle pas* de lui;
He complains *of me*, I do not ſpeak *of him.*

They are ſometimes, but ſeldom, *conjunctive*, and expreſſed by *en.* Example:

Vous aimez ma couſine, vous en *parlez ſouvent*;
You love my couſin, you ſpeak often *of her.*
Parliez-vous de moi? Oui, nous en *parlions*;
Were you ſpeaking of me? Yes, we were.

RULE 47. - - - *Perſonal Pronouns in the Dative Caſe.*

When the perſonal pronouns are in the dative, they are moſt commonly *conjunctive*, and expreſſed by *me, te, lui, nous, vous, leur*, for both genders. Example:

Il me *plait. Je* lui *ferai du bien. Je* leur *parlerai.*
He pleaſes *me.* I will do *him* good. I will ſpeak *to them.*

They are *disjunctive*, and expreſſed by *à moi, à toi, à lui, à elle, à nous, à vous, à eux, à elles*, in three caſes.

1. When they come after a noun or a pronoun to which they are joined by a conjunction. Example:

Je vous parle auſſi bien qu'à eux;
I ſpeak to you as well as to *them.*

2. When they are governed by a reflected verb. Example:

Il s'addreſſe à moi; *je ne me fie pas* à lui;
He directs himſelf *to me*; I do not truſt *him.*
Not *il me s'addreſſe, je ne me lui fie pas.*

3. When they are governed by any of the following verbs: *aller*, to go; *courir*, to run; *accourir*, to run to; *boire*, to drink; *penſer, ſonger*, to think; *venir*, to come. Example:

Il vient à nous, *allez* à lui, *je penſe* à vous;
He comes to us, go to him, I think of you.
And not *il nous vient, allez lui, je vous penſe.*

RULE 48. - - - *Perſonal Pronouns in the Accuſative Caſe.*

When the perſonal pronouns are governed by a verb in the accuſative, they are generally *conjunctive*, and expreſſed by *me, te, nous, vous, le, la, les.* Example:

Je le *connois*; *Je* la *verrai*; *Je* les *eſtime*;
I know *him*. I will ſee *her*. I eſteem *them*.
And not *je connois lui, je verrai elle, j'eſtime eux.*

RULE 49. - - - *Perſonal Pronouns after a Prepoſition.*

When the perſonal pronouns are preceded by a prepoſition, they are always *disjunctive*, and expreſſed by *moi, toi, lui, elle,* &c. Example:

Pour moi *je penſe ainſi*; as for *me*, I think ſo.
Vous parlerez après eux; you will ſpeak after *them*.
And not *pour me je penſe ainſi*; *vous parlerez après les.*

SECTION THE SECOND.

Of the Imperſonal Pronouns, it, they, them *.

RULE 50. - - - *The Imperſonal Pronouns* it *or* them.

The imperſonal pronouns *it* or *they*, which the Engliſh uſe with reference to animals or things, are expreſſed in French by *il* or *elle* for the ſingular, and by *ils* or *elles* for the plural, when they are the nominative of a verb. *It* or *them* are expreſſed by *le, la, les*, when they are governed by a verb in the accuſative caſe: thus, ſpeaking of a houſe, we ſay,

Elle *eſt belle, je ne* la *vendrai pas, je* la *garderai*;
It is fine, I will not ſell *it*, I will keep *it*.

Obſerve, that theſe pronouns are expreſſed in French in the ſame manner for the nominative and accuſative as the perſonal pronoun, of which before; and that they alſo agree in gender and number with the ſubſtantive to which they have reference.

* *I call imperſonal pronouns, thoſe which have reference to animals and things.*

RULE 51. - - - en *uſed in the Genitive, for* it *or* them.

The impersonal pronouns *it* or *them*, uſed with reference to inanimate objects, are expreſſed by *en*, when the French verb governs the genitive caſe, whether they be preceded in Engliſh by the prepoſitions *of, from, with, about, for, upon*, or any other*. Example:

*N'*en *parlez plus*; do not ſpeak any more *of it*.
Vous m'avez rendu ſervice, je vous en *remercie*;
You have done me a ſervice, I thank you *for it*.
Vous avez obtenu une bonne place, je vous en *félicite*;
You have got a good place, I congratulate you *upon it*.

When the words *ſome* or *any* come after a verb, and refer to a ſubſtantive antecedent, they are alſo expreſſed by *en*. Example:

J'ai des pommes, en *voulez-vous? Donnez m'*en *un couple.*
I have ſome apples, will you have *any*? Give me a couple of them.
*Prenez-*en *davantage. Qu'*en *ferai-je? Vous* en *donnerez à vos ſœurs.*
Take *ſome* more. What ſhall I do *with them*? You will give *ſome* to your ſiſters.

RULE 52. - - - lui *or* y, *for* it *or* them, *in the Dative Caſe.*

The impersonal pronouns *it* or *them*, governed by a verb which requires the dative in French, are expreſſed by *lui* or *leur*, as the perſonal pronouns, when they refer to animals or plants, and uſually by *y*, when they refer to other inanimate objects not perſonified. Example:

*Vos chevaux ont faim, donnez-*leur *de l'avoine*;
Your horſes are hungry, give them *ſome* oats.
Cet arbre eſt beau, ne lui *faites point de mal*;
This tree is fine, do not hurt *it*.
Voilà un beau tableau, mettez y *une bordure*;
There is a fine picture, put a frame *to it*.
*C'eſt une entrepriſe difficile, vous n'*y *réuſſirez pas*;
It is a difficult undertaking, you will not ſucceed *in it*.
And not *mettez-lui une bordure*, nor *vous ne lui réuſſirez pas.*

* *See the government of verbs in the ſyntax, chapter* 13*th.*

If, however, the impersonal pronouns were said of inanimate objects personified, or were preceded by the verb *to owe*, or *to be indebted*, they should be expressed by *lui* or *leur*, and not by *y*. Thus *lui* and *y* can be said of the same object, joined to different verbs. Example:

Cette maison est bien située, faites y *faire des réparations, vous lui devez votre santé*; not *vous* y *devez*, &c.

This house is well situated, have some repairs done *to it*, you are indebted *to it* for your health.

The words *en* and *y*, of which mention is made in the two preceding rules, are also two adverbs of place; *en* stands for the words *hence, from thence*; and *y* for *there*, or *thither*. Example:

*Voulez-vous venir à Londres? Non, j'*en *viens*;
Will you go to London? No, I come from *thence*.
*Avez-vous été en France? Non, je n'*y *ai jamais été*;
Have you been to France? No, I have never been *there*.

RULE 53. - - - it *or* them *after a Preposition.*

When the impersonal pronouns *it* or *them* are preceded by a preposition, they cannot be expressed by *lui* or *elle, eux* or *elles*, which in this case are said only of persons or personified objects; but they are usually left out, and the preposition used in English becomes an adverb when it conveys the idea sufficiently. Example:

Le Roi étoit pour la guerre, mais le parlement fut contre;
The King was for the war, but the parliament was *against it*.
Approchez-vous du feu. Je suis tout auprès;
Come near the fire. I am *near it*.

If the preposition cannot become an adverb, we must give the sentence another turn. Example;

D'abord la maison fut brulée, et ensuite l'église;
At first the house was burnt, and *after it* the church.

RULE 54. - - - *Use of the supplying Pronouns*, le, la, les.

The supplying pronoun, *le, la, les*, is always used in French before the verb *être*, in answer to a question, though there is no pronoun expressed in English.

Le is uſed with reference, 1, to a ſubſtantive ſingular and maſculine. Example: *êtes-vous le frère de Pierre? Oui, je* le *ſuis*; Are you Peter's brother? Yes, I am. 2, with reference to adjectives of both genders and numbers. Example: *vos frères ſont-ils ſavans? Non, ils ne* le *ſont pas*; Are your brothers learned? No, they are not. *Vos ſœurs ſont-elles malades? Oui, elles* le *ſont*; Are your ſiſters ſick? Yes, they are. 3, with reference to verbs. Example: *Croyez-vous qu'ils viennent? Oui, nous* le *croyons*; Do you think they will come? Yes, we do *.

La is uſed with reference to a ſubſtantive ſingular and feminine. Example: *Etes-vous la femme de Pierre? Oui, je* la *ſuis*; Are you Peter's wife? Yes, I am.

Les is uſed with reference to a ſubſtantive plural of both genders. Example: *Sont-ce là vos livres? Oui, ce* les *ſont.* Are theſe your books? Yes, they are. *Sont-ce là vos maiſons? Non, ce ne* les *ſont pas.* Are theſe your houſes? No, they are not †.

Le indeclinable, is alſo uſed without interrogation, with reference to adjectives, or verbs of both genders, it ſtands for the words *it* or *ſo*, ſometimes expreſſed in Engliſh, but for the moſt part underſtood. Example: *Vous êtes heureuſe, et moi je ne* le *ſuis pas*; you are happy, and I am not. *Je* le *diſois, mais vous ne vouliez pas le croire*; I ſaid ſo, but you would not believe it.

SECTION THE THIRD.

The right placing of Perſonal and Impersonal Pronouns.

RULE 55. - - - *Place of the Perſonal Pronouns.*

The perſonal pronouns *je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils,* or

* *We can alſo anſwer,* oui, Monſieur; oui, Madame, *&c. without repeating the verb the queſtion is aſked by.*

† Ce *is uſed in anſwer to a queſtion aſked by* eſt-ce là, *or* ſont-ce là? *Example:* eſt-ce la votre chapeau? oui, ce l'eſt.

elles, uſually precede the verb of which they are the nominative caſe.

They can be ſeparated from it by the particle *ne*, and the governed pronouns, if there are any, but never by any adverb. Example:

Il ne les *a pas vus*. *Je* ne leur *parlerai pas*.
He has not ſeen them. I will not ſpeak to them.
Vous dites toujours *la vérité*. *Il parle* ſouvent *de vous*.
You always ſpeak the truth. He often ſpeaks of you.
Not *vous toujours dites la vérité*. *Il ſouvent parle de vous*.

They are placed immediately after the verb, or its auxiliary, in three caſes.

1. In an interrogative ſentence. Example:
Parlez-vous *François*? *L'avez*-vous *appris long-temps*?
Do you ſpeak French? Have you learnt it long?

2. When they are the nominative of the verbs *dire*, *répondre*, *répliquer*, *continuer*, *pourſuivre*, or *s'écrier*, uſed in a ſentence as by parentheſis. Example:
Vous voyez, dit-il *l'état où je ſuis réduit*;
You ſee, ſaid he, the condition I am reduced to.
Pourquoi, *lui* répondis-je *ne me l'avez-vous pas dit plutôt*;
Why, did I anſwer him, have you not told it me before?

3. Moſt frequently when the verb is preceded by the conjunctions *au moins*, *auſſi*, *ainſi*, *envain*, *peut-être*, *à peine*, and ſome others. Example:
Envain *cherchez-vous des excuſes*. Peut-être *viendra-t-il*;
In vain you ſeek for excuſes. *Perhaps* he will come.

RULE 56. --- *The governed Pronouns placed after the Verb.*

The perſonal and imperſonal pronouns are placed in French as in Engliſh, immediately after the verb they are governed by, when it is in the ſecond perſon ſingular, the firſt or ſecond plural of the imperative affirmative. Example:
Parlez leur, *écrivez* lui, *répondez* nous, *voyez* les.
Speak *to them*, write *to him*, anſwer *us*, ſee *them*.

If there are two imperatives joined by a conjunction, the governed pronouns go after the firſt, and before the ſecond. Example:

Prêtez le moi *ou* me le *vendez*; lend or ſell it me.
Pardonnez leur *ou* les *puniſſez*; forgive or puniſh them.

If the verb which is in the imperative affirmative governs two pronouns, the accuſative goes firſt. Example:

Donnez le moi, *vendez* le leur; give it me, ſell it them.

When *y* or *en* meet with another pronoun, they go the laſt. However, *moi* is placed after *y*, and *m'en* is uſed inſtead of *moi en*. Example:

Menez nous y, *menez* les y, *menez* y moi;
Carry us thither, carry them thither, carry me thither.
Donnez leur en, *donnez* nous en, *donnez* m'en;
Give them ſome, give us ſome, give me ſome.
Not *donnez en leur, donnez en nous, donnez en moi.*

RULE 57. - - - *The governed Pronouns placed before the Verb.*

When the verb is in any other tenſe or perſon than the firſt and ſecond of the imperative affirmative, the governed pronouns are always put immediately before it in a ſimple tenſe, and before its auxiliary in a compound one. Example:

Vous ne les *connoiſſez pas, vous ne* les *avez pas vus*;
You do not know them, you have not ſeen them.
Ne leur *parlez pas, ne* me *refuſez pas*;
Do not ſpeak *to them*, do not refuſe *me*.

The governed pronouns do not precede any other verbs than thoſe they are governed by, or their auxiliaries: thus we ſay, *Je voulois* leur *parler, il pouvoit* le *faire*; not *je leur voulois parler*, nor *il le pouvoit faire*; *I* wanted to ſpeak to them, he could do it.

RULE 58. - - - *Order in which Pronouns are put before the Verb.*

When two or more pronouns are governed by a verb, which is not in the imperative affirmative, thoſe of the firſt and ſecond perſons precede thoſe of the third; and if they are both of the third perſon, the accuſative is placed before the dative, *y* and *en* go the laſt; or what is the ſame, they are invariably placed before the verb in the following order:

Me, te, ſe nous, vous, *go before* le, la, les.
Le, la, les, *go before* lui, leur.
Lui, leur, *go before* y.
Y, *goes before* en. Example:

Il me le *donne*, il vous l'a *prêté*, *il* nous les *a envoyés*.
He gives it me, he has lent it you, he has ſent them to us.
Quand il me les *enverra*, *je* vous les *porterai*;
When he ſends them to me, I ſhall bring them to you.
Il le lui *donne*, *il* le leur *prêtera*, *il* les lui *a envoyés*;
He gives it him, he will lend it to them, he has ſent them to him.
Je vous y en *porterai*, *je* leur y en *ai porté*;
I will carry you ſome thither, I have carried ſome thither to them.

SECTION THE FOURTH.

When the Pronouns are or not repeated in French.

RULE 59. - - - *The Perſonal Pronouns*, je, tu, il, *&c. repeated.*

The perſonal pronouns of the firſt and ſecond perſons, as, *je*, *tu*, *nous*, *vous*, are uſually repeated in French before every verb of which they are the nominative caſe. Example:

Vous *aimerez Dieu de tout votre cœur*, vous *pardonnerez à vos ennemis*, *et* vous *prierez pour vos perſécuteurs*;
You ſhould love God with all your heart, you ſhould forgive your enemies, and pray for thoſe who perſecute you.

The pronouns of the third perſon are repeated. 1. When they belong to different tenſes. 2. When the ſecond is preceded by any other conjunction than *et* or *ni*. 3. When the firſt is affirmative and the ſecond negative, or *vice verſâ*. Example:

1. Elle *eſt modeſte*, *et* elle *le ſera toujours*, *je ſuis ſûr*;
She is and will always be modeſt, I am ſure.
2. Elles *ſont aimables*, *puis qu'*elles *vous plaiſent*;
They are lovely, ſince they pleaſe you.
3. Il *le dit*, *mais* il *ne le croit pas*;
He ſays ſo, but he does not believe it.

In other circumſtances, the pronouns of the third perſons are not uſually repeated before verbs which are in the ſame tenſe. Thus we ſay:

Il *prit des villes, conquit des provinces, et ſubjugua des nations*;
He took towns, conquered provinces, and ſubdued nations.

RULE 60. - - - *The governed Pronouns*, me, te, ſe, *&c. repeated.*

The governed pronouns are always repeated in French before every verb; in Engliſh, on the contrary, they are ſeldom repeated. Example:

Un fils bien élevé ne s'arme jamais contre ſon père, il l'aime, l'honore et le reſpecte;
A ſon well educated never rebels againſt his father, he loves, honours, and reſpects him.
Je l'aime et je l'aimerai toujours;
I love and ſhall always love him.

SECTION THE FIFTH.

Diſtinction between lui, elle, ſe, *and* ſoi.

RULE 61. - - - himſelf, herſelf, *expreſſed by* ſe, lui, elle, *or* ſoi.

The compound pronouns, *himſelf, herſelf, themſelves*, joined to a verb, are generally expreſſed by *ſe*, if it is reflected; but if not, *himſelf* is expreſſed by *lui*, or *lui-même*, and *herſelf* by *elle-même*; *themſelves* by *eux* or *eux-mêmes*, for the maſculine; by *elles* or *elles-mêmes*, for the feminine. Example:

Il ſe ſoumet à vos ordres, mais il n'eſt pas content;
He ſubmits himſelf to your orders, but he is not ſatisfied.
Elle parle toujours d'elle, or *d'elle même, et jamais des autres*;
She always ſpeaks of herſelf, and never of others.
Ils ſont venus d'eux-mêmes, à la campagne;
They are come of their own accord into the country.

The compound pronouns, *himſelf* and *herſelf*, are expreſſed

by *ſoi*, ſpeaking of perſons in general, and after the indeterminate pronouns, *on*, *chacun*, *quelqu'un*, *quiconque*, *celui*, or *celle qui*. Example:

L'homme qui n'aime que ſoi *n'eſt pas propre pour la ſociété*;
The man who loves nobody but *himſelf*, is not fit for ſociety.
Chacun agit pour ſoi *en ce monde*;
Every one acts for himſelf in this world.
*Quiconque ne penſe qu'*à ſoi *eſt indigne de vivre*;
Whoever thinks only of *himſelf* is unworthy to live.
The word *ſoi* is not uſed with reference to a noun plural.

RULE 62. - - - itſelf *is rendered by* lui *or* ſoi.

The impersonal pronoun *itſelf* is expreſſed by *ſoi*, and not by *lui*, when it has reference to the words, *ceci*, *cela*, or to a ſubſtantive ſingular and maſculine, which repreſents an inanimate object. Example:

Cela eſt bon en ſoi; that is good in itſelf.
L'aimant attire le fer à ſoi;
Load-ſtone attracts iron to itſelf.

When *itſelf* has a reference to an animate object, it is expreſſed by *lui-même* or *elle-même*. It is alſo expreſſed by *elle-même*, and not by *ſoi*, when it refers to an inanimate object of the feminine gender. Example:

*La terre eſt fertile d'*elle-même; not *de ſoi*.
Earth is fruitful of itſelf.

CHAPTER V.

Of Poſſeſſive Pronouns.

RULE 63. - - - *The Poſſeſſive Pronouns agree and are repeated before every Subſtantive.*

The conjunctive poſſeſſive pronouns are repeated in French before every ſubſtantive, and agree with them in gender and number. Example:

Mon père, ma *mère et* mes *frères*, *ſont à la campagne*;
My father, mother, and brothers are in the country.

When a noun feminine begins with a conſonant, we uſe the poſſeſſive pronouns, *ma*, *ta*, *ſa*, before it, and *mon*, *ton*, *ſon*, when it begins with a *vowel* or an *h* mute. Example:

Ma table, f. mon *hiſtoire*, f. *My* table, my hiſtory.
Sa maiſon, f. ſon *âme*, f. *His* houſe, his ſoul, &c.

The Engliſh make their poſſeſſive pronouns agree with the poſſeſſor; the French, on the contrary, with the thing poſſeſſed: thus, *his*, is often expreſſed by *ſa*, and *her* by *ſon*. Example: ſpeaking of a woman, we ſay, ſon *père eſt mort*, her father is dead. Son *mari eſt jeune*; her huſband is young. And, ſpeaking of a man, we ſay, ſa *femme eſt belle*; his wife is handſome. Sa *fille eſt mariée*, his daughter is married.

RULE 64. - - - *The Poſſeſſive Pronouns are uſed in ſpeaking to one's Relations.*

When we ſpeak to our relations or friends, we uſe, in French, the poſſeſſive pronouns, *mon*, *ma*, *mes*, before the words *fils*, *fille*, *ſœur*, *frère*, *père*, *mère*, *oncle*, *tante*, &c. Example:

Où êtes-vous, ma *fille*? Where are you, daughter?
Me voici, mon *père*; here I am, father.
Mon *frère*, *voulez-vous venir avec moi*? *Oui*, ma *ſœur*;
Brother, will you come with me? Yes, ſiſter.

RULE 65. - - - *When the Qualifications of* Mr. *and* Mde. *are uſed.*

When we aſk any body ſome particulars of their relations or friends, the qualifications of *Monſieur*, *Madame*, *Mademoiſelle*, &c. are uſually prefixed in French to the poſſeſſive pronouns *votre* or *vos*. Example:

Comment ſe porte Monſieur *votre père*?
How does your father do?
Meſdemoiſelles *vos ſœurs*, *ſont-elles à la maiſon*?
Are your ſiſters at home?
Madame *votre mère eſt-elle en bonne ſanté*?
Is your mother well?

RULE 66. - - - *When the Poſſeſſive Pronouns are rendered by the Perſonal.*

The poſſeſſive pronouns (*my, thy, his, her*, &c.) are expreſſed in French by the perſonal pronouns *me, te, ſe, nous, vous, leur*, in the dative; and not by *mon, ton, ſon*, &c. when the verb which precedes them denotes an action over any part of the body. Example:

Vous m'*avez rompu le bras*; you have broke my arm.
Je lui *ai coupé le doigt*; I have cut his finger.
Vous leur *marchez ſur le pied*; you tread upon their feet.
Vous me *bleſſez la main*; you hurt my hand.
Not *mon bras, ſon doigt, leur pied, ma main.*

RULE 67. - - - *When the Poſſeſſive Pronouns are or are not left out in French.*

If the verb does not expreſs an action over any part of the body, the poſſeſſive pronouns (*my, thy, his, her*, &c.) are expreſſed by *mon, ton, ſon*, &c. when the ſentence does not ſufficiently determine of whoſe arm, leg, feet, eye, &c. we are ſpeaking. Example:

Je vois que mon *bras enfle*; I ſee that my arm ſwells.
Penſez-vous que ma *main ſe guériſſe jamais?*
Do you think my hand will ever be cured?

Theſe pronouns are quite left out in French, and the definite article is uſed inſtead of them, if there is no equivocation to be feared. Example:

J'ai mal au *côté*; I have a pain in my ſide.
Il a mal aux *yeux*; his eyes are ſore; not *à ſes yeux.*

Obſerve, I put *mon bras, ma main*, in the firſt ſentences, becauſe I can ſee another perſon's arms ſwelling as well as mine; and I put *au côté, aux yeux*, not *à mon côté, à ſes yeux*; becauſe I cannot feel pains in any other ſide than mine, nor can he have other eyes ſore than his own. This diſtinction is a nice point, and muſt be attended to.

RULE 69. - - - *When* its *or* their *are expreſſed by* ſon, *and* when *by* en.

When the poſſeſſive pronouns *its* or *their* are uſed with re-

ference to an inanimate object, they are expreſſed by *ſon, ſa, ſes, leur,* or by *en,* according to the following diſtinction:

1. By *ſa, ſon, ſes, leur,* when they belong to the ſame verb as the noun to which they refer, and alſo when they are in any other caſe than in the nominative or accuſative. Ex.

Londres a ſes *beautés; j'admire la grandeur de* ſes *rues;*
London has *its* beauties; I admire the ſize of *its* ſtreets.

2. By *en,* when they are in the nominative or accuſative, and do not belong to the ſame verb as their antecedent. Ex.

*Londres eſt une belle ville, j'*en *admire la grandeur;*
London is a fine town, I admire *its* extent.

When *its* or *their* have reference to an animate object, they are always expreſſed by *ſon, ſa, ſes, leur, leurs.* Example:

Votre cheval perd ſon *fer*; your horſe loſes *its* ſhoes.

RULE 69. - - - *Of the Poſſeſſive Pronouns,* mine, thine, &c.

The disjunctive poſſeſſive pronouns (*mine, thine, his, hers,* &c.) agree in French, both in gender and number, with the ſubſtantive to which they have reference, and are always preceded by the definite article, *le, la, les.* Example:

Beaucoup de maiſons ont été détruites pendant le ſiége; la vôtre *et* la mienne *ont été brulées, mais* la leur *n'a point de mal*;
Many houſes have been deſtroyed during the ſiege; *yours* and *mine* have been burnt, but *theirs* has not ſuffered.

RULE 70. - - - mine *is ſometimes expreſſed by* mes,

When the disjunctive poſſeſſive pronouns (*mine, thine, his, hers,* &c.) are preceded by *of,* they are expreſſed in French by the conjunctive *mes, tes, ſes, nos, vos, leurs,* and not by *le mien, le tien, le ſien,* &c. Example:

Un de mes *amis*; a friend of mine (not *un ami des miens*).
Un de vos *livres*; a book of yours (not *un livres des vôtres*).

Turn, one of my friends; one of your books, and in the ſame way all ſentences of this ſort.

RULE 71. - - - mine, thine, *expreſſed by* à moi, à toi.

The disjunctive *mine, thine,* &c. are expreſſed by *à moi, à toi, à lui, à elle, à nous, à vous, à eux, à elles,* when they

come after the verb *to be*, which has for nominative a ſubſtantive, or the perſonal pronouns *il* or *elle*. Example:

Ce livre eſt à moi; that book is mine.
Il n'eſt pas à vous *je crois*; I do not think it is yours.

If the verb *être* is followed by *ce*, then *mine*, *thine*, &c. ſhould be expreſſed by *le mien*, *le tien*, *le ſien*, &c. Example:

Eſt-ce là votre montre? *Oui, c'eſt* la mienne;
Is that your watch? Yes, it is mine.

N. B. If a ſubſtantive or a relative pronoun come after the verb *être* ſignifying *to belong*, they are put in the dative caſe in French, and in the genitive in Engliſh. Example:

Ce cheval eſt à mon père; this horſe is my father's.
A qui *eſt cette maiſon?* whoſe houſe is that?

CHAPTER VI.

OF DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

RULE 72. - - - *ce, cet, cette*, that; *ces*, thoſe.

The demonſtrative pronouns (*this* and *that*) are expreſſed in French by *ce* before a ſubſtantive ſingular and maſculine, when it begins with a conſonant; as, *ce jardin*, this garden: and by *cet* when it begins with a vowel or *h* mute; as, *cet oiſeau*, this bird; *cet homme*, this man: by *cette* before a ſubſtantive feminine; as, *cette maiſon*, that houſe: *theſe* and *thoſe* are expreſſed by *ces* before a ſubſtantive plural of both genders; as, *ces hommes*, theſe men; *ces femmes*, theſe women.

The demonſtrative pronouns are repeated before every ſubſtantive, and agree with each in gender and number. Ex.

Ce *jardin*, cet *arbre*, cette *maiſon*, *et tous* ces *meubles ne valent pas trois cens guinées*;
This garden, this tree, this houſe, and all this furniture, are not worth three hundred guineas.

To determine more preciſely the ſubject we are ſpeaking of,

we add often in French the particle *ci* or *là* to the ſubſtantive preceded by *ce, cet, cette,* or *ces.* Example:

Cet homme-là eſt un coquin; that man is a rogue.
Ces plumes-ci ne valent rien;
Theſe pens are good for nothing.

RULE 73. - - - *Ceci, cela,* this, that.

The demonſtrative pronouns (*this* and *that*) are expreſſed in French by *ceci* and *cela,* when they are uſed to point at ſome object, without ſpecifying what it is. Example:

Ceci *eſt bon,* cela *eſt mauvais*; this is good, that is bad.
Vous demandez toujours pourquoi ceci, *pourquoi* cela;
You always aſk what is this for, what is that for.
Pourquoi avez-vous fait cela *ſans ma permiſſion?*
Why did you do that without my leave?

RULE 74. - - - *Ce qui,* or *ce que*; what, *or* that which.

The pronouns *that which* or *what,* ſignifying *that thing which,* are expreſſed in French by *ce qui* or *ce que,* always ſingular and maſculine. *Ce qui* is uſed when there is no nominative caſe between it and the verb, and *ce que* when there is one. Example:

Ce qui *eſt agréable au goût, eſt ſouvent contraire à la ſanté*;
What is agreeable to the taſte, is often prejudicial to the health.
Vous me donnez ce que *vous n'aimez point*;
You give me *that which* you do not like.

When *ce qui* or *ce que* begins a ſentence of two parts, the word *ce* muſt be repeated before the auxiliary verb *être,* if it is followed by a verb or a ſubſtantive in the plural number. Example:

Ce que je crains le plus, *ce* ſont les trahiſons;
What I fear moſt, is treaſon.
Ce que je déſire le plus, c'*eſt* qu'on faſſe la paix;
What I wiſh for moſt, is that peace may be made.

The demonſtrative *ce* may, or may not, be repeated, when the verb *être* is followed by a ſubſtantive ſingular; but it muſt not, when the verb *être* is followed only by an adjective. Example:

Ce que je demande, *eſt* (or *c'eſt*) une amitié réciproque;
What I aſk for, is a reciprocal friendſhip.
Ce que j'ai mangé *étoit* excellent, not *c'étoit* excellent;
What I have eaten was very good.

RULE 75. - - - *celui-ci, celui-là*; this or that.

When the demonſtrative pronouns are related to ſeveral ſubſtantives, *this* and *theſe* have reference to the objects neareſt or laſt ſpoken of, and are expreſſed, *this* by *celui-ci* or *celle ci*; *theſe* by *ceux-ci* or *celles-ci*; *that* and *thoſe* have reference to the moſt diſtant objects, and are expreſſed, *that* by *celui-là* or *celle-là*; *thoſe* by *ceux-là* or *celles-là*, according to the gender and number of the ſubſtantive to which they have reference. Example:

Le corps périt, l'âme eſt immortelle; cependant nous négligeons celle-ci, *et nous ſacrifions tout pour* celui-là.
The body periſhes, the ſoul is immortal; however we neglect *this*, and ſacrifice every thing for *that*.
Voici de bons livres; leſquels aimez-vous le mieux, de ceux-ci *ou de* ceux-là?
Here are good books, which do you like beſt, *theſe*, or *thoſe*?

N. B. *The former*, is alſo expreſſed by *celui* or *celle-là*, and *the latter*, by *celui* or *celle-ci*.

RULE 76. - - - *celui de* or *celle de*, &c. that of.

When the demonſtrative pronouns are followed immediately by the prepoſition *of*, they are expreſſed, *that of* by *celui* or *celle de*, and *thoſe of*, by *ceux* or *celles de*. Example:

Il dépenſe tout ſon bien et celui de *ſa femme*;
He ſpends all his fortune, and *that of* his wife.
Prenez ces chevaux, ou ceux de *mon fils*;
Take theſe horſes, or *thoſe of* my ſon.

RULE 77. - - - *celui qui*, or *celle qui*, that which.

When the demonſtrative pronouns are followed by *which*, expreſſed or underſtood, they are expreſſed, *that which* by

celui or *celle qui*, and *thoſe which*, by *ceux* or *celles qui*, or *que*. Example:

Cette maiſon eſt plus grande que celle que *j'ai vendue*;
This houſe is larger than *that which* I have ſold.
Ces livres valent mieux que ceux que, *vous m'avez prêtés*;
Theſe books are better than *thoſe* you have lent me.

The word *which*, uſed in anſwer to a queſtion, is alſo expreſſed by *celui* or *celle qui*, when the queſtion is aſked by *which*. Example:

Laquelle de ces oranges voulez-vous? Celle qu'il *vous plaira*.
Which of theſe oranges will you have? *Which* you pleaſe.

RULE 78. - - - he who, *expreſſed in French by* celui qui.

When the perſonal pronouns (*he*, *ſhe*, *they*, or *thoſe*) are the antecedent of *who*, *that*, or *which*, they are not expreſſed by *il* or *elle*, as before; but *he who* is rendered by *celui qui*, *ſhe who* by *celle qui*, *they who* by *ceux* or *celles qui*. Example:

Celui qui *ne ſauroit garder un ſecret, eſt incapable de gouverner*;
He who cannot keep a ſecret, is incapable of governing.
Ceux que *vous protégez, vous trahiſſent*;
They whom you protect betray you.

When the pronouns *he*, *ſhe*, or *they*, are ſeparated from the relative pronouns, *who* or *which*, they muſt be joined in French, and the ſecond part of the ſentence in Engliſh is expreſſed the firſt in French. Example:

Celui qui *ſe révolte contre ſa patrie, eſt un mauvais citoyen*;
He is a bad citizen *who* rebels againſt his country.
Ceux qui *croient que les rois ſont heureux, ſe trompent*;
Thoſe are miſtaken *who* believe that kings are happy.

Theſe pronouns can however be ſeparated as in Engliſh, adding the particle *là* to *celui* or *celle*. Example:

Celui-là *eſt un mauvais citoyen* qui *ſe révolte contre ſa patrie*;
He is a bad citizen *who* rebels againſt his country.
Ceux-là *ſe trompent* qui *croient que les rois ſont heureux*;
They are miſtaken *who* think that kings are happy.

CHAPTER VII.

Of Relative Pronouns.*

RULE 79. - - - *qui, que,* who, that, which.

The relative pronouns, *who, that,* or *which,* are expreſſed by *qui,* for all ſorts of objects, when there is no nominative caſe between them and the verb; and by *que* when there is one. Example:

L'homme qui *parle. Le livre* qui *eſt ſur la table.*
The man *who* ſpeaks. The book *which* is on the table.
La femme que *j'ai vue. La leçon* que *j'ai appriſe.*
The woman *whom* I have ſeen. The leſſon *which* I have learnt.

The pronoun *que* is not always in the accuſative caſe, as may be ſeen by the following Examples:

C'eſt de vous que *je me plains; c'eſt à vous* que *je parle; c'eſt contre vous* que *j'écris.*
It is of you I complain; it is to you I ſpeak; it is againſt you I write.

Que, in the firſt example, is for *de qui,* for *à qui* in the ſecond, and for *contre qui* in the third; the word *that,* which anſwers to it, is often underſtood in Engliſh.

RULE 80. - - - dont, *or* de qui, of whom, whoſe, *or* of which.

The relative pronouns, *whoſe,* of *whom,* or of *which,* are uſually expreſſed by *dont* for all ſorts of objects, when the noun, to which they have reference is in the nominative or accuſative caſes. Example:

J'ai vu la perſonne dont *vous parlez;*
I have ſeen the perſon *of whom* you ſpeak.
C'eſt une maladie dont *on ne connoit pas la cauſe;*
It is an illneſs, the cauſe of which is unknown.

* *See the definition and declenſion of relative pronouns, page* 54.

If the antecedent is not in the nominative or accuſative, inſtead of *dont* we generally make uſe of *de qui*, ſpeaking of perſons, and always of *duquel, de laquelle, deſquels*, &c. ſpeaking of animals and things. Example *:

C'eſt une perſonne à la diſcrétion de qui *je n'oſerois me fier* (not *dont*);

He is a man to *whoſe* diſcretion I dare not truſt.

C'eſt une maladie aux progrès de laquelle *il faut apporter de prompts remedes*, not *aux progrès* de qui, or dont;

It is an illneſs to the progreſs *of which* one cannot apply too quick remedies.

Note, The relative pronoun *from whom*, which anſwers to the Latin ablative, is always expreſſed by *de qui*, and never by *dont*. Thus we ſay,

L'homme de qui (*not* dont) *j'ai reçu hier une lettre, eſt malade*;

The man *from whom* I received a letter yeſterday is ſick.

RULE 81. - - - *qui*, or *lequel, laquelle*; whom, which.

When the relative pronouns are in the dative caſe, or after a prepoſition, they are uſually expreſſed by *qui* ſpeaking of perſons, and always by *lequel* or *laquelle* ſingular, *leſquels* or *leſquelles* plural, ſpeaking of animals and things. Example:

Votre père eſt un homme à qui *j'ai beaucoup d'obligations et ſans* qui *je ſerois mort à préſent.*

Your father is a man to *whom* I am much obliged, and without *whom* I ſhould have been dead before now.

La gloire à laquelle *les Héros aſpirent, eſt ſouvent une fauſſe gloire*, (not *la gloire à qui*);

The glory *to which* Heroes ſacrifice, is often a falſe glory.

C'eſt une raiſon à laquelle *il n'y a point de réplique*;

It is a reaſon *to which* there is no reply.

RULE 82. - - - *When* où *can be uſed for* lequel.

When the relative pronouns are in the genitive, dative, ablative, or after a prepoſition, and refer to an inanimate ob-

* *The noun antecedent is not in the nominative or accuſative after any prepoſition whatever. Thus* dont *muſt not be uſed when the ſubſtantive is preceded by* of, from, to, againſt, with, &c.

ject, they are indifferently expreſſed by *où* or by *lequel, laquelle*, &c. if the verb denotes ſome motion or reſt, at leaſt figuratively. Example:

Evitez les fautes où (*or dans* leſquelles) *je ſuis tombé*;
Avoid the faults *into which* I have fallen.
*Je connois le principe d'*où (*or* duquel) *découle tout votre ſyſtême*;
I know the principle *from which* your ſyſtem is derived.

Note, *Où* and d'*où* are alſo adverbs of place, and ſtand for the words *where* or *whence*. Example:

Où *allez-vous? D'*où *venez-vous? Par* où *avez-vous paſſé?*
Where are you going? From *whence* do you come? *Where* have you paſſed?

RULE 83. - - - *The Relative Pronouns are never omitted in French.*

The conjunction *that*, and alſo the relative pronouns *who, whom, that*, or *which*, are often underſtood in Engliſh; but *qui* or *que*, which anſwer to them, are never underſtood in French. Example:

Je crois que *vous avez tord*; I think you are in the wrong.
L'homme à qui *je parlois, eſt très riche*;
The man I was ſpeaking to, is very rich.
La leçon que *j'ai appriſe, eſt très longue*;
The leſſon I have learnt, is very long.
Le livre que *vous liſez, eſt à moi*; the book you read is mine.

RULE 84. - - - *Place and Concord of the Relative Pronouns.*

The relative pronouns are always of the ſame gender, number, and perſon, as the ſubſtantive or pronoun antecedent, to which they have reference, and are placed immediately after in French. Example:

Il rejetta un avis dont *il connoiſſoit l'utilité*;
He rejected an advice, the utility of which he knew.
C'eſt moi qui *le dis. C'eſt vous* qui *l'avez fait*.
It is I *who* ſay ſo. It is you *who* have done it.
Les livres pour leſquels *j'ai ſouſcrit*;
The books I have ſubſcribed for.
La maiſon dans laquelle *je demeure*;
The houſe in *which* I live.

CHAPTER VIII.

Of Interrogative Pronouns.

The interrogative pronouns are in Engliſh theſe three, *who*, *which*, and *what*, they are expreſſed in French as follows:

RULE 85. - - - *qui?* or *qui eſt-ce qui?* who?

The interrogative pronouns *who*, *whoſe*, *to whom*, &c. which are ſaid only of perſons, are expreſſed in French by *qui* or *qui eſt-ce qui*, when they are the nominative caſe of a verb, by *qui* in all other caſes, and never by *que* or *dont*, as the relative pronouns, of which before. Example:

Qui or *qui eſt-ce qui eſt là?* Who is there?
De qui parlez-vous? Of whom do you ſpeak? not, *dont*.
Avec qui demeurez-vous? With whom do you live?
A qui écrivez-vous? To whom do you write?

RULE 86. - - - *lequel*, *laquelle*, &c. which.

The word *which*, interrogatively uſed, is always expreſſed by *lequel* or *laquèlle* for the ſingular, and by *leſquels* or *leſquelles* for the plural. Example:

Laquelle *de mes ſœurs voulez-vous épouſer?*
Which of my ſiſters will you marry?
Lequel *de ces chevaux me conſeillez-vous d'acheter?*
Which of theſe horſes do you adviſe me to buy?
Lequel *de vos frères apprend le François?*
Which of your brothers learn French?

RULE 87. - - - *quel*, *quelle?* what?

When the pronoun *what* is interrogatively uſed, it is expreſſed in French by *quel* or *quelle*, before a ſubſtantive ſingular, and by *quels* or *quelles* before a ſubſtantive plural. Example:

Quel *crime cet homme a-t-il commis?*
What crime has this man committed?

A quelle *paſſion eſt-il enclin?*
To *what* paſſion is he inclined?
A quel *jeu jouerons-nous?* What game ſhall we play at?

RULE 88. - - - what, *expreſſed by* que, *or* qu'eſt-ce que.

When the interrogative pronoun *what*, ſignifies *what thing*, it is expreſſed in French by *que*, or *qui eſt-ce qui* for the nominative, and by *que* or *qu'eſt-ce que* for the accuſative. Example:

Que *vous eſt-il arrivé?* or qu'eſt-ce qui *vous eſt arrivé?*
What has happened to you?
Que *blâmez-vous dans cet ouvrage?* or qu'eſt-ce que *vous blâmez?*
What do you blame in that work?

RULE 89. - - - what, *is expreſſed by* quoi *after a Prepoſition.*

When the pronoun *what* is in the genitive, dative, or after a prepoſition, and ſignifies *what thing*, it is always expreſſed by *quoi*, whether the ſentence be interrogative or not. Example:

En quoi *ſuis-je coupable?* In what am I guilty?
Je ſais de quoi *il ſe plaint*; I know of *what* he complains.
De quoi *m'accuſez-vous?* Of *what* do you accuſe me?
C'eſt en quoi *vous vous trompez*;
It is in *what* you are miſtaken.

Obſervations upon which *and* what.

Which... The word *which*, is expreſſed in French four different ways, as you may obſerve from the examples of the preceding rules:

1. By *qui* in the nominative, and *que* in the accuſative, as in rule 79.
2. By *dont* in the genitive, as in rule 80.
3. By *lequel* or *laquelle*. 1, in the dative. 2, after a prepoſition. 3. in an interrogation, as in rules 81, 82, and 86.
4. By *celui qui*, or *celle qui*, &c. in anſwer to a queſtion, as in rule 77.

What... The word *what*, is expreſſed four different ways in French.

1. By *ce qui* in the nominative, and *ce que* in the accuſative, when it ſignifies *that thing which*, as in rule 74.

2. By *quoi* in the genitive, dative, or after a prepoſition; whether the ſentence be interrogative or not, when it ſignifies *what is the thing which*, as in rule 89.

3. By *quel* or *quelle*, &c. before a ſubſtantive in an interrogative ſentence, as in rule 87.

4. By *que*, or *qu'eſt-ce qui*, or *que*, as in rule 88.

CHAPTER IX.

On the different Sorts of Interrogations.

RULE 90. - - - *Interrogations made with* où, d'où, comment, *&c.*

Beſides the interrogative pronouns, of which we treated before, a queſtion is often aſked with the following adverbs, *combien*, how much, how many; *comment*, how; *pourquoi*, what for; *où*, where; *d'où*, from whence; *par où*, through what place. Example:

Combien *avez-vous de chevaux?*
How many horſes have you got?
Comment *ſe porte Monſieur votre père?*
How does your father do?
Pourquoi *ne repondez-vous pas?* Why do you not anſwer?
Où *allez-vous?* D'où *venez-vous?*
Where are you going? From whence do you come?

RULE 91. - - - *The Pronouns* je, tu, il, *&c. go after the Verb in an Interrogation.*

When the following pronouns, *je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles, ce,* or *on,* are the nominative caſe of a verb interrogatively uſed, they are placed *immediately* after in a ſimple tenſe, and after its auxiliary in a compound one. Example:

Etes-vous *malade?* *Avez*-vous *été malade?*
Are *you* ſick? Have *you* been ſick?

Apprenez-vous *le François ? Avez*-vous *appris l'Italien ?*
Do *you* learn French ? Have *you* learnt Italian ?
Dit-on *des nouvelles ? Vous a*-t-on *dit des nouvelles ?*
Is there any news ? Have *you* heard any news ?

In an interrogative ſentence we always put a hyphen thus : (-) between the verb and pronouns, as you may obſerve in the preceding examples.

When the verb ends with a vowel and the pronoun begins with another, we put a *-t-* with two hyphens between them, to avoid the hard ſound which would reſult from the meeting of two vowels. Example :

Parle-t-il ? *Viendra*-t-elle ? *Chante*-t-elle *bien ?*
Does he ſpeak ? Will ſhe come ? Does ſhe ſing well ?

A verb which ends in *e* mute in the firſt perſon, takes an acute accent, when it is interrogatively uſed. Example :

Je parle, parlé-je ? Je me promene, me promené-je ?
I ſpeak, do I ſpeak ? I walk, do I walk ?

N. B. When a verb interrogatively uſed has but one ſyllable in the firſt perſon ſingular of the preſent of the indicative mood, we aſk the queſtion with *eſt-ce que*. Thus,

Eſt-ce que je perds, eſt-ce que je dors ? (Not *perds-je, dors-je ?*
Do I loſe ? Do I ſleep ?

RULE 92. - - - *In an Interrogation the Subſtantive goes before the Verb.*

When a verb interrogatively uſed has for its nominative caſe *a ſubſtantive*, or any of the following pronouns, *le mien, le tien, le ſien, le nôtre, le vôtre, le leur, ceci, cela, quelqu'un, aucun, perſonne,* or *rien,* it is put after them in French ; but the verb is always followed by the pronouns *il* or *elle, ils* or *elles,* as if there was no nominative caſe before. Thus we ſay :

Le dîner eſt-il *prêt* ; Is the dinner ready ?
Cela eſt-il *bon à manger ?* Is that good to eat ?
Quelqu'un m'a-t-il *demandé ?* Did any body aſk for me ?
Toute la compagnie eſt-elle *arrivée ?*
Is all the company come ?—and *ſo on for others.*

RULE 93. - - - *eſt-ce là*, is that? *n'eſt-ce pas là*, is not that?

The Engliſh put the demonſtrative pronouns *this* or *that* for the ſingular; *theſe* or *thoſe* for the plural; before the poſſeſſive *my*, *his*, *your*, *their*, &c. when they aſk to whom belong ſuch or ſuch a thing. Theſe ſorts of interrogations are expreſſed in French by *eſt-ce là*, or *ſont-ce là*, if the ſentence is affirmative; and by *n'eſt-ce pas là*, or *ne ſont-ce pas là*, if negative. Example:

Eſt-ce là *votre maiſon?*	N'eſt-ce pas là *votre maiſon?*
Is that your houſe?	Is not that your houſe?
Sont-ce là *vos jardins?*	Ne ſont-ce pas là *vos jardins?*
Are theſe your gardens?	Are not theſe your gardens?

All ſentences of this kind are expreſſed in the ſame manner.

RULE 94. - - - *Interrogations rendered by* eſt-ce que, *or* n'eſt-ce pas.

The Engliſh often aſk a queſtion leſs to be informed, if ſuch a thing is or is not, than to ſhew their ſurpriſe that it is ſo; theſe ſorts of interrogations are expreſſed in French by *eſt-ce que*. Example:

Eſt-ce *qu'il pleut?* It does not rain, does it?
Eſt-ce *que votre frère eſt mort?*
Your brother is not dead, is he?

If the queſtion is negative, the firſt part of the ſentence having poſitively affirmed that the thing in queſtion is ſuch or ſuch, it is expreſſed in French by *n'eſt-ce pas que*, at the beginning of a ſentence, and by *n'eſt-ce pas* at the end. Ex.

N'eſt-ce pas qu'il fait beau tems? Or, *il fait beau tems n'eſt-ce pas?*
It is good weather, is it not?
N'eſt-ce pas que nous avons vu le Roi? Or, *nous avons vu le Roi n'eſt-ce pas?*
We have ſeen the King, have we not?

CHAPTER X.

Different Sorts of que.

There are in French five diſtinct ſorts of *que*, called (*que*) relative, (*que*) interrogative, (*que*) admirative, (*que*) conditional, and (*que*) conjunctive. Having ſpoken at large of the two firſt, in the ſeventh and eighth Chapters, we will next treat of the remaining three.

RULE 95. - - - que *of Admiration*, how *or* how much.

The *que* of admiration expreſſes wonder or ſurpriſe; it anſwers to the Engliſh words *how, how much, how many*. Ex.

Que *vous êtes jolie!* How pretty you are!
Que *les ouvrages de Dieu ſont admirables!*
How wonderful are the works of God!
Que *je hais les impies!* How I hate the impious!

Obſ. 1. That the adjective which follows *how* in Engliſh, is always put after the verb in French. Example:

Que je ſuis malheureux! How unhappy I am!

2. That, if *how much*, or *how many*, are followed by a ſubſtantive, the *que* which anſwers to them is always followed by *de* in French. Example:

Que de *peine vous avez pour moi!*
How much trouble you take for me!

N. B. If *how many* was preceded by the prepoſition *of, to*, or any other, it ſhould be expreſſed by *combien de*, and not by *que*. Example:

A combien de *dangers n'ai-je pas été expoſé en France*;
To how many dangers have I not been expoſed in France.

RULE 96. - - - que *conditional*, whether *or* if *in Engliſh*.

The conditional *que* is uſed in the beginning of a ſentence, for the word *whether*, and in the middle to avoid the repe-

tition of *ſi*: In both caſes it governs the ſubjunctive mood. Example:

Qu'il le faſſe ou non, je ne m'en ſoucie pas;
Whether he does it or not, I do not care.
S'il vient quelqu'un & que *je ſois ſorti, envoyez moi chercher*;
If ſome body comes and I am out, ſend for me.

RULE 97. - - - que *uſed for ſeveral Conjunctions.*

The *que* conjunctive may be uſed for many conjunctions, and particularly for the ten following:

1. Afin que,	*that.*	6. Depuis que,	*ſince.*
2. A moins que,	*unleſs.*	7. Juſqu'à ce que,	*till.*
3. Avant que,	*before.*	8. Parce que,	*becauſe.*
4. Cependant,	*yet.*	9. Quand,	*when.*
5. De peur que,	*for fear.*	10. Pourquoi,	*why.*

Example:

1. *Venez ici* que *je vous parle*;
Come here, *that* I may ſpeak to you.

2. *Je n'irai pas le voir*, qu'il *ne m'en prie.*
I will not go and ſee him *unleſs* he invites me.

3. *Vous ne partirez pas* qu'il *ne ſoit jour.*
You ſhall not go out *before* it is light.

4. *Il auroit tout l'or du monde* qu'il *ne ſeroit pas content.*
Though he ſhould have all the gold in the world, *yet* he would not be ſatisfied.

5. *Partez* que *le maître ne vienne*;
Go out, *for fear* the maſter ſhould come.

6. *Combien y a-t-il* que *votre frère eſt mort?*
How long has your brother been dead?

7. *Attendez* qu'il *ne pleuve plus*; wait *till* the rain is over.

8. *Si je ne vins pas hier, c'eſt* que *j'avois des affaires*;
If I did not come yeſterday, it was becauſe I had buſineſs.

9. *J'étois à Londres le jour* qu'il *mourut*;
I was at London the day he died.

10. Que *ne répondez-vous, quand je vous parle?*
Why do you not anſwer, when I ſpeak to you?

Note. The conjunction *que* is placed between two verbs, and ſerves to particulariſe the ſenſe of the firſt; this conjunction muſt be uſed in French every time the word *that* is or could be expreſſed in Engliſh, Example:

Je penſe qu'*on ne peut être heureux ſans pratiquer la vertu*;
I think one cannot be happy without practiſing virtue.
Je maintiens qu'*il a raiſon*; *il paroît* que *vous avez tort*;
I maintain he is in the right; it appears you are in the wrong.

Obſervations.

The word *que* is alſo uſed, 1, to join the two terms of a compariſon; as, *je ſuis plus jeune* que *vous*; I am younger *than* you. 2, To reſtrain a negative ſentence, then it ſtands for *but* or *only*; as, *je n'ai* que *quinze ans*; I am *but* fifteen years of age. 3, To expreſs a wiſh, a command, an imprecation or indignation; as, *qu'il périſſe l'impie*; may the impious periſh.

CHAPTER XI.

OF INDETERMINATE PRONOUNS.

RULE 98. - - - *Uſe of the Particle* on, *one.*

All vague and general reports, expreſſed in Engliſh by *they ſay, we ſay, people ſay, one ſays, it is ſaid, it is reported*, and ſuch like, are rendered in French by *on*, with the verb in the third perſon ſingular of the active voice. Example:

On dit, on croit, on ſoutient partout que la choſe eſt ainſi;
People ſay, it is thought, they maintain every where that it is ſo.
On n'eſt pas toujours maître de ſes paſſions;
One is not always maſter of one's paſſions.

The paſſive voice is ſeldom uſed in French, therefore we often turn the paſſive into active, putting the pronoun *on* in-

ſtead of the nominative uſed in Engliſh; thus, *it is ſaid, it is reported,* &c. are expreſſed by *on dit, on raporte,* &c. Ex.

On *croit que la paix ſe fera cette année*;
It is believed that peace will be made this year.
*A-t-*on *reçu des lettres de France aujourd'hui?*
Have letters been received from France to-day?
On *a envoyé un courier en Eſpagne*;
A courier has been diſpatched to Spain.

On muſt be repeated before every verb of which it is the nominative caſe. Example:

On *loue,* on *blame,* on *menace,* on *punit,* &c.
They praiſe, blame, threaten, puniſh, &c.

RULE 99. - - - *Caſes where* l'on *is uſed inſtead of* on.

On takes elegantly an *l'* after the words *et, ſi,* or *ou.* Ex.

Si l'on *pratiquoit la vertu, on ſeroit heureux ſur la terre, et* l'on *ſe procureroit un bonheur éternel*;
If we would practice virtue, we ſhould be happy in this world, and procure ourſelves an eternal happineſs.
On vous a récompenſé, ou l'on *vous récompenſera bientôt*;
You have been, or will be ſoon rewarded.

L'on is alſo uſed after *que,* provided the next verb begins by the ſyllable *com* or *con.* Example:

On apprend mieux ce que l'on *comprend, que ce que* l'on *ne comprend pas*;
We learn better what we underſtand, than what we do not.

N. B. *L'on* ſounds better than *on* in the above ſentences, and is always uſed by good authors in ſuch caſes, provided it be not followed by *le, la, les,* in which caſe *on* never takes an *l.* Thus we could not ſay, *mettez là votre lettre, l'on la lira*; but we muſt ſay, *on la lira.*

RULE 100. - - - *Different Significations of* même.

The word *the ſame* is expreſſed in French by *le* or *la même* for the ſigular, and by *les mêmes* for the plural, whether it be joined or relative to a ſubſtantive. Example:

La même *choſe ne plait pas à tout le monde*;
The ſame thing does not pleaſe every body.

Les uſages ne ſont pas les mêmes *dans tous les pays*;
Cuſtoms are not the *ſame* in every country.

The word *même* is often uſed in French to give more energy to the ſpeech; then it comes after a ſubſtantive or a pronoun, and anſwers to the Engliſh expreſſions, *himſelf, herſelf, itſelf*, &c. Example:

Le Roi même *s'y oppoſa*; the King *himſelf* oppoſed it.
La religion même *le défend*; religion *itſelf* forbids it.

The word *même* is ſometimes an adverb; then it anſwers to the Engliſh words *alſo* or *even*. Example:

Il faut aimer tout le monde, même *nos ennemis*;
We muſt love every body, *even* our enemies.

RULE 101. - - *Pluſieurs*, many, *or* ſeveral.

The words *many* and *ſeveral* are expreſſed by *pluſieurs*, always plural of both genders. Example:

Pluſieurs *ſe trompent en voulant tromper les autres*;
Many deceive themſelves when they want to deceive others.
Ne vous appliquez pas à pluſieurs *choſes à la fois*;
Do not apply yourſelf to *ſeveral* things at once.

RULE 102. - - - Un autre, *pronoun or adjective*, another.

The indeterminate pronouns, *other, another*, are expreſſed by *un autre* for the ſingular, and by *les autres* for the plural. Theſe words are either pronouns or adjectives; when pronouns, they are always maſculine; and when adjectives, they agree in gender and number with the ſubſtantive to which they have reference. Example:

Un autre *ne vous auroit pas pardonné ſi facilement que moi*;
Another would not have forgiven you ſo eaſily as I did.
Ne parlez pas mal des autres, *ſi vous ne voulez pas que* les autres *parlent mal de vous*;
Do not ſpeak ill of *others*, if you will not that *others* ſpeak ill of you.

N. B. When the word *others* is in the genitive or dative caſes, it is moſt commonly expreſſed in French by *autrui*. Example:

Il ne faut point déſirer le bien d'autrui;
We muſt not covet other men's goods.
Ne faites point à autrui, *ce que vous ne voudriez pas qu'on vous fit.*
Do not do by others, what you would not be done by.

RULE 103. - - - *Chacun, always ſing. and maſ.* every one.

The indeterminate pronouns, *every one, every body,* are generally expreſſed by *chacun,* always *m.* and *ſing.* Example:
Dieu rendra à chacun *ſelon ſes œuvres;*
God will reward *every body* according to his works.
Chacun *vit à ſa manière:*
Every one lives after his own way.

The word *every* before a ſubſtantive is expreſſed by *chaque,* adj. Example:
Chaque ſcience a ſes principes;
Every ſcience has its principles.
Chaque pays a ſes uſages; every country has its cuſtoms.

The word *each* is uſually expreſſed by *chacun.* Example:
Remettez ces livres chacun *à ſa place;*
Put theſe books, *each* in its place.
Les tableaux des grands maîtres, ont chacun *leur mérite;*
The pictures of great painters have *each* their merit.

RULE 104. - - - *Quelqu'un, ſing. and maſc.* ſomebody.

The indeterminate pronouns, *ſome body, any body,* are expreſſed by *quelqu'un,* ſingular and maſculine. Example:
Quelqu'un viendra dîner avec nous;
Somebody will come to dine with us.
Quelqu'un *a-t-il jamais douté de l'exiſtence de Dieu?*
Has ever *any body* doubted of the exiſtence of God?

The words *ſome* and *any* before a ſubſtantive are expreſſed by the partitive article *du, de la, des,* or by *quelque.* Exam.
Donnez moi de *l'encre,* du *papier et* des *plumes;*
Give me *ſome* ink, *ſome* paper, and *ſome* pens.
Il y a des *défauts,* (*or* quelques *défauts*) *dans cet ouvrage;*
There are *ſome* faults in this work.

When *ſome* or *any* are ſubſtantively uſed, they are expreſſed by *quelques uns* or *quelques unes*, always plural. Exam.

Je me ſervirai de quelques uns *de vos livres*;
I will make uſe of *ſome* of your books.
Connoiſſez-vous quelques unes *de ces dames?*
Do you know *any* of theſe ladies?

When *ſome* or *any* have reference to a ſubſtantive uſed in the preceding ſentence, they are uſually expreſſed by *en*, as we have ſeen before, rule 51. Example:

J'ai des oranges, en voulez-vous;
I have ſome oranges, will you have *any?*

Of tout, *and its various Conſtructions.*

The word *tout* admits of a great diverſity in the French language, being either a ſubſtantive, an adjective, a pronoun, or even an adverb, according to the following explanations:

RULE 105. - - - le tout, *ſubſtant. ſing. and maſc.* the whole.

When the Engliſh word *the whole* is not placed before a noun, it is a ſubſtantive, and expreſſed by *le tout*, always ſingular and maſculine. Example:

Le tout *eſt plus grand que ſa partie*;
The whole is greater than a part.
Je prendrai le tout; I will take *the whole.*

The word *all*, or *every thing*, followed by a verb, are alſo ſubſtantives, and expreſſed by *tout*, but without an article. Example:

Tout *eſt vanité en ce monde*; all is vanity in this world.
Biens, dignités, honneurs, tout *diſparoît à la mort*;
Fortune, dignities, honour, *every thing*, diſappears when we die.

RULE 106. - - - toute le, toute-la, *adj.* all, *or* the whole.

When the words *all* or *the whole* come before a ſubſtantive,

they are adjectives, and expreſſed by *tout le* or *toute la*, for the ſingular, and by *tous les* or *toutes les* for the plural. Ex.

Je ſuis avec tout le *reſpect poſſible, Monſieur*, &c.
I am with *all* the reſpect poſſible, Sir, &c.
Toute *la flotte eſt en mer*; *the whole* fleet is at ſea.

Note. When *tout* ſtands for the word *every* placed before a ſubſtantive, it takes an article in the plural, but not in the ſingular. Example:

Tout *homme eſt mortel*; *every* man is mortal.
Venez nous voir tous les *jours*; come and ſee us *every* day.
And not *tout l'homme eſt mortel*; nor *venez nous voir tous jours* *.

RULE 107. - - - *tout ce qui, tout ce que, pronoun*, all that, every thing that.

The Engliſh words, *all that, every thing that*, and alſo *whatever*, ſignifying *all that*, are pronouns, and expreſſed in French by *tout ce qui*, or *tout ce que*, always ſingular and maſculine. Example:

Tout ce que *vous dites eſt vrai*; *all that* you ſay is true.
Tout ce qui *brille n'eſt pas or*; it is not *all* gold *that* glitters.
Vous n'avez pa vu tout ce qu'*il y avoit de curieux*;
You have not ſeen *every thing that* was curious.

RULE 108. - - - tout, *declinable and indeclinable*, quite.

When the word *tout* ſtands for the adverbs *quite, entirely, although*, or the firſt *as* of a ſentence where two are uſed, it is always indeclinable before a noun maſculine, ſingular or plural. Example:

Les philoſophes tout *ſavants quils ſont, ſe trompent quelquefois*;
Philoſophers, *as* learned *as* they are, ſometimes are miſtaken.

It is alſo indeclinable before a noun feminine of both numbers which begins with a vowel or *h* mute; but it is declinable before a noun feminine which begins with a conſonant, and agrees with it in gender and number. Example:

* *However, we ſay*, tout le monde, *for* every body, *and not* toute monde.

Votre mère eſt tout *alarmée*; *vos ſœurs ſont* tout *abatues*.
Your mother is *quite* alarmed; your ſiſters are *quite* caſt down.

Thoſe above are indeclinable; the following are declinable:
Votre mère fut toute *ſurpriſe à cette nouvelle*;
Your mother was *quite* ſurpriſed at that news.
Vos ſœurs toutes *riches* & toutes *belles qu'elles ſont, ne ſe marient point*;
Your ſiſters, *as* rich and handſome *as* they are, do not marry.

Three Sorts of quelque.

There are three ſorts of *quelque*, which muſt be carefully diſtinguiſhed: the *firſt* comes before an adjective, and is always indeclinable; the *ſecond* takes an *s* when it comes before a ſubſtantive plural; the *third* comes before the verb *être*, and is ſpelt in two words; thus, *quel que*, maſculine ſingular; *quelle que*, feminine; *quels que*, maſculine plural; *quelles que*, feminine. All of them govern the verb following in the ſubjunctive mood.

The three following rules will explain the right placing of words in thoſe ſentences where the French conſtruction is different from the Engliſh.

RULE 109. - - - quelque, *indeclinable*, however, howſoever.

When the Engliſh words, *however, howſoever, though never ſo much*, or *ſo little*, come before an adjective, they are expreſſed in French by *quelque* indeclinable.

The conſtruction of the ſentence is as follows: 1, *quelque* is put the firſt; 2, the adjective; 3, *que*; 4, the verb in the ſubjunctive mood; 5, the ſubſtantive; the reſt as in Engliſh. Example:

Quelque *bonnes que ſoient vos raiſons, on ne les écoutera pas*;
Though your reaſons are never ſo good, they will not be heard.

Quelque *louable que ſoit votre conduite, elle ſera condamnée*;
However praiſe-worthy your conduct may be, it will be condemned.

RULE 110. - - - quelque, *adj. and declinable*, whatever.

The Engliſh word *whatever*, followed by a *ſubſtantive*, and any other verb than *to be*, is an adjective, and expreſſed by *quelque* before a noun ſingular, and by *quelques* with an *s* before a noun plural.

The conſtruction is, 1, *quelque*; 2, the ſubſtantive; 3, *que*; 4, the verb in the ſubjunctive mood; the reſt as in Engliſh. Example;

Quelque *fautes qu'il ait commiſes, je lui pardonnerai*;
Whatever faults he has committed, I will forgive him.
Quelques *biens que vous ayez, vous n'êtes jamais content*;
Whatever fortune you have, you are never ſatisfied.

RULE 111. - - - quel que, quelle que, &c. *in two words*,

The Engliſh word *whatever*, followed by a *ſubſtantive* and the verb *to be*, is expreſſed in French by *quel que*, in two words, for the maſculine ſingular, and by *quelle que* for the feminine: by *quels que* for the maſculine plural, and by *quelles que* for the feminine.

The conſtruction is, 1, *quel* or *quelle*; 2, *que*; 3, the verb in the ſubjunctive mood; 4, the ſubſtantive; the reſt as in Engliſh. Example:

Quelle que *ſoit ſa faute, je lui pardonnerai* *;
Whatever his fault may be, I will forgive him.
Quels que *ſoient vos talens, vous ne réuſſirez pas ſans application*;
Whatever your talents may be, you will not ſucceed without application.

* *I have repeated the ſame ſentence in theſe three rules, to render more obvious the difference between* quelque *indeclinable*, quelques *adjective, and* quel que *in two words.*

RULE 112. - - - *quelque choſe que*, or *quoi que ce ſoit* whatever.

The Engliſh words *whatever*, *whatſoever*, meaning *all things ſoever*, are uſually expreſſed by *quelque choſe que*, when the ſentence is affirmative, and by *quoique ce ſoit* when negative. They govern the next verb in the ſubjunctive mood. Example:

Quelque choſe que *vous* faſſiez *pour moi, je vous en récompenſerai*;
Whatever you do for me, I will reward you for it.
Je ne me plains de quoi que ce ſoit; *je n'ai vu* quoi que ce ſoit;
I complain of nothing whatever; I have ſeen nothing whatever.

RULE 113. - - - *quiconque, qui que ce ſoit*, whoever, whoſoever.

The indeterminate pronouns *whoever*, *whoſoever*, are moſt uſually expreſſed by *quiconque*, when they are in the nominative or accuſative caſe. Example:

Quiconque s'abandonne à ſes paſſions, ſe rend malheureux;
Whoever abandons himſelf to his paſſions, renders himſelf unhappy.
Dieu punira quiconque *tranſgreſſe ſes lois*;
God will puniſh whomſoever tranſgreſſes his laws.

They are uſually expreſſed by *qui que ce ſoit*, when they are in the genitive, dative, or after a prepoſition. Example:

De qui que ce ſoit *que vous parliez, évitez la médiſance*;
Of whomſoever you ſpeak, avoid ſlander.

The pronoun *nobody whatever*, is alſo expreſſed by *qui que ce ſoit*, or by *perſonne*, almoſt indifferently. Example:

Il ne ſe fie à perſonne, or *à* qui que ce ſoit;
He truſts nobody whatever.
Perſonne (or qui que ce ſoit) *ne m'a parlé contre vous*;
Nobody whatever has ſpoken to me againſt you.

N. B. When the pronoun *whoever* comes immediately before *you*, it is expreſſed in French by *qui que*. Example:

Qui que vous ſoyez, je ne vous crains pas;
Whoever you may be, I do not fear you.

RULE 114. - - - *L'un l'autre*, one another.

The indeterminate pronouns, *one another*, *each other*, are expreſſed in French, by *l'un l'autre*, maſc. *l'une l'autre*, fem. with reference to a noun ſingular, and by *les uns les autres*, maſc. *les unes les autres*, fem. with reference to a noun plural.

The firſt of theſe pronouns is always in the nominative in French; thus, if they are preceded by a prepoſition in Engliſh, that prepoſition muſt be put between them in French. Example:

Mon frère & votre ſœur parlent toujours l'un de *l'autre, ils penſent l'un* à *l'autre, ils ſont faits l'un* pour *l'autre, ils ne ſauroient vivre l'un* ſans *l'autre.*

My brother and your ſiſter ſpeak always *of one another*, they think *of one another*, they are made *for one another*, they cannot live without *one another.*

RULE 115.

L'un et l'autre, &c.	*Both, one and another.*
L'un ou l'autre, &c.	*Either.*
Ni l'un ni l'autre, &c.	*Neither*.*

Theſe pronouns agree in gender and number with the noun to which they have reference; if they are preceded by a prepoſition in Engliſh, that prepoſition muſt be repeated in French before *l'un*, and before *l'autre.* Example:

Je le ferai pour *l'un* & pour *l'autre*;
I will do it *for* them both.
Je le ferai pour *l'un ou* pour *l'autre*;
I will do it *for* either.
Je ne le ferai ni pour *l'un ni* pour *l'autre*;
I will do it *for* neither of them.

Note. The word *both* followed by a ſubſtantive is expreſſed by *les deux*; as, *je me ſers* des deux *mains*, I uſe *both* hands. *Both* followed by *and* is a conjuction, ſometimes expreſſed by *et*, but oftener left out in French. Example:

Il eſt heureux et *en paix et en guerre*, or *il eſt heureux en paix et en guerre*;
He is happy *both* in peace and war.

* *Ni l'un ni l'autre requires* ne *before the verb.*

RULE 116. - - - *perſonne*, nobody.

The indeterminate pronoun, *nobody*, is expreſſed by *perſonne*, maſculine and ſingular. *Perſonne* requires *ne* before the verb. Example:

Perſonne *ne ſait s'il eſt digne d'amour ou de haine*;
Nobody knows whether he is worthy of love or hatred.
Vous ne plaiſez à perſonne; you pleaſe *nobody*.

Perſonne is maſculine as a pronoun, and feminine as a ſubſtantive; thus we ſay,

Je ne connois perſonne *ſi ſavant que vous*;—maſculine.
I know nobody ſo learned as you.
Je connois une perſonne *auſſi ſavante que vous*;—feminine.
I know a perſon as learned as you are.

RULE 117. - - - aucun, pas un, *none*, *not one*.

None is expreſſed by *aucun* or *aucune*, and *not one*, by *pas un* or *pas une*, adj. both require *ne* before the verb. Exam.

J'avois bien des amis, cependant pas un *ne m'a ſecouru*;
I had many friends, yet *not one* has relieved me.
Aucun *de vous n'y étoit preſent*; *none* of you were there.

RULE 118. - - - rien, *nothing*.

The word *nothing* is expreſſed by *rien*, and *ne* before the verb. Example:

Il n'y a rien *de plus rare qu'un véritable ami*;
Nothing is more rare than a true friend.
Je n'ai rien *vu de plus beau*; I have ſeen *nothing* finer.

Aucun, *perſonne*, and *rien*, do not require *ne* before the verb in a ſentence interrogative or of doubt; but then *aucun* and *perſonne* ſtand for *any body*, and *rien* for *any thing*. Example:

Y eut-il jamais perſonne *plus éloquent que Cicéron?*
Was there ever *any body* more eloquent than Cicero?
Avez-vous jamais rien *vu de plus curieux?*
Have you ever ſeen *any thing* more curious?
Je doute qu'il y ait aucun *auteur ſans défaut*;
I queſtion if there is *any* author without fault.

CHAPTER XII.

SEVERAL MODES OF NEGATION.

This chapter is divided into two ſections: *the firſt* explains how to expreſs in French the Engliſh negations; *the ſecond* ſhews the ſeveral circumſtances in which a negative expreſſion is required in French, though there is none in Engliſh.

SECTION THE FIRST.

How to expreſs in French the Engliſh Negations.

The Engliſh negations are theſe eight: 1, *nobody*; 2, *none* or *not one*; 3, *nothing*; 4, *neither*; 5, *never*; 6, *by no means*; 7, *no*; 8, *not*. We have ſpoken in the preceding rules of the three firſt, therefore we will only treat here of the five others.

RULE 119. - - - ni *or* ni ne, neither *and* nor.

The word *neither*, beſides its being an indeterminate pronoun, (as we ſaid before, rule 115) is alſo a negative conjunction when it is followed by *nor*. When *neither* and *nor* come before two nouns, or two verbs in the infinitive mood, they are both expreſſed by *ni* and *ne* before the verb, which is in the indicative mood. Example;

Ni *prieres* ni *menaces* ne *purent l'attendrir*;
Neither prayers nor threatening could move him.
Il ne *ſait* ni *lire* ni *écrire*;
He knows *neither* how to read *nor* write.

If theſe conjunctions come before two verbs in the indicative mood, *neither* is expreſſed by *ne* before the firſt, and *nor* by *ni ne* before the ſecond. Example:

Je ne *vous loue*, ni ne *vous blâme*;
I *neither* praiſe *nor* blame you.
Il ne *vous aime*, ni ne *vous hait*;
He *neither* loves *nor* hates you.

RULE 120. - - - *ne* and *jamais*, never; *nullement*, by no means.

The word *never* is rendered by *jamais*; *by no means* is expreſſed by *nullement*. *Jamais* and *nullement* require *ne* before the verb, without *pas* after. Example:

Je n'*ai* jamais *vu la Reine d'Angleterre*;
I have *never* ſeen the Queen of England;
Je n'*approuve* nullement *votre conduite*;
I *by no means* approve of your conduct.

RULE 121. - - - *aucun, aucune, point de*, or *non*, no.

The negative expreſſion *no* before a ſubſtantive, is expreſſed in French by *point de*, or by the adjective *aucun*, maſculine, *aucune*, feminine, before a noun ſingular, and by *aucuns*, maſculine, *aucunes*, feminine, before a noun plural. Example:

Vous n'avez aucunes *bonnes qualités* (or point de *bonnes qualités*);
You have *no* good qualities.
Il n'a aucun *ſoin*, (*ou* point de *ſoin*) *de ſes affaires*;
He takes *no* care of his buſineſs.

When *no* is uſed in anſwer to a queſtion, it is expreſſed in French by *non*. Example:

Avez-vous vu le Roi? non, *Monſieur*;
Have you ſeen the King? *no*, Sir.
Apprenez-vous le François? non, *Madame*;
Do you learn French? no, Madam.

RULE 122. - - - *ne pas, non pas que*, or *non que*; not.

The negative *not* is uſually expreſſed by *ne* before the verb or its auxiliary, and by *pas* or *point* after. Example:

Ne *lui parlez* pas; ne *lui avez-vous* pas *parlé*?
Do *not* ſpeak to him; have you *not* ſpoken to him?

If the verb, negatively uſed, is in the preſent infinitive, *ne* and *pas* are both placed before it. Example:
Je m'en vais pour ne pas *vous déplaire*;
I go away, not to diſpleaſe you.
Il faut être inſenſé pour ne pas *voir qu'il a tort*;
One muſt be a fool not to perceive that he is in the wrong.

The word *not* followed by *that*, is expreſſed by *non que*, or *non pas que*. Example:
Je le ferai non que (*ou* non pas que) *j'y ſois obligé, mais pour avoir la paix.*
I will do it, *not that* I am obliged to, but to have peace.

RULE 123. - - - ne *without* pas, *before ſome verbs*; not.

The negative *not* is expreſſed by *ne*, without *pas* or *point*, with theſe four verbs, *ceſſer*, to ceaſe; *oſer*, to dare; *pouvoir*, to be able; and *ſavoir*, for to be able. Example:
Il ne *ceſſe de ſe plaindre*; he does not ceaſe complaining.
Je n'*oſe lui parler*; I dare not ſpeak to him.
Je ne *puis marcher*; I cannot walk.
Vous ne *ſauriez le refuſer*; you cannot refuſe him.

Note. The words *no more*, or *not any more*, are expreſſed by *ne* before the verb, and *pas plus* after, when *more* is followed by *than*; but they are expreſſed by *plus* without *pas*, when *more* is not followed by *than*. Example:
Je n'*ai* pas plus *de vingt ans*;
I am *no more than* twenty years of age.
Il n'*y a* pas plus *de huit jours que j'ai vu votre frère*; *vous ne le verrez* plus, not *vous ne le verrez* pas plus.
It is *no more than* a week ſince I ſaw your brother; you will ſee him *no more*.

RULE 124. - - - *Diſtinction between* pas *and* point.

1. *Point* is more excluſive than *pas*. The firſt denies ab-

ſolutely and ſignifies *not at all*. The ſecond denies ſometimes but in part. Example:

Tous ceux qu'on accuſe ne ſont point *coupables*;
Tous ceux qu'on accuſe ne ſont pas *coupables*;
All the accuſed perſons are not guilty.

The firſt ſentence ſignifies that none of the accuſed are guilty; the ſecond ſignifies only that the accuſed are not all guilty. See Wailly, page 309.

2. We make uſe of *point* in an interrogative ſentence, when we doubt of the thing in queſtion, and of *pas* when we are perſuaded of it. Example:

N'avez-vous point *vu mon frère aujourd'huy*;
N'avez-vous pas *vu mon frère aujourd'huy*;
Have you not ſeen my brother to-day?

In the firſt ſentence, I doubt whether you have ſeen my brother or not; in the ſecond, I am perſuaded you have ſeen him.

3. We make uſe of *point* to denote that a thing happens never or very ſeldom, and of *pas* to denote that it does not happen in the time we are ſpeaking, though it may happen very often. Example:

Vous n'étudiez point; *Vous n'étudiez* pas;
You do not ſtudy.

The firſt ſentence ſignifies, that habitually you do not ſtudy; and the ſecond that you do not ſtudy at preſent, though you may be very ſtudious.

N. B. This diſtinction, though very exact, and conformable to the practice of the beſt French authors, is not always obſerved, even by Frenchmen; and I muſt confeſs there are many circumſtances in which they can be almoſt indifferently uſed.

SECTION THE SECOND.

Negative Expreſſions in French, and not in Engliſh.

RULE 125. - - - *Negation uſed in French and not in Engliſh.*

The particle *ne* is uſed in French after the following words *plus*, more; *mieux*, better; *moins*, leſs; *pire*, worſt; *plutôt*, ſooner; *autre*, *autrement*, otherwiſe: in all theſe caſes there is no negative expreſſion in Engliſh. Example *:

Votre frère eſt plus jeune que je ne *penſois*;
Your brother is younger than I thought.
Vous êtes venu plutôt qu'on ne *vous attendoit*;
You are come ſooner than you were expected.

RULE 126. - - - *Negation uſed in French and not in Engliſh.*

The particle *ne* is uſed after theſe four verbs, *appréhender*, to apprehend; *avoir peur*, to be afraid; *craindre*, to fear; and *empêcher*, to hinder, when they are affirmatively uſed, but not when negatively; thus with theſe verbs there is always one negation in the ſentence, and never two. Example:

J'empêcherai qu'il ne *vous faſſe tort*; *Je* n'*empêcherai* pas *qu'il vous faſſe tort*;
I will hinder him from doing you wrong; I will not hinder him from injuring you.
Je crains qu'il ne *vienne*; *Je* ne *crains* pas *qu'il vienne*;
I fear he will come; I do not fear he will come.

Nier, to deny; and *douter*, to doubt; on the contrary, require *ne* before the next verb when they are negatively uſed, but not when affirmatively; thus with *nier* and *douter*, there are two negations in the ſentence, or none. Example:

* Ne *ſhould be left out, if the verb was in the infinitive mood, or if there was a conjunction between* que *and the verb, as we ſaid before, in the ſecond note of rule* 40.

Je doute qu'il ſoit arrivé; *Je* ne *doute* pas *qu'il* ne *ſoit arrivé*;
I doubt whether he is come; I do not doubt that he is come.

RULE 127. - - - *Negation uſed in French and not in Engliſh.*

The five following conjunctions, *à moins que, unleſs*; *de crainte que*, for fear; *de peur que*, leſt; *ſi*, uſed for *unleſs*; and *que*, for before or until, require the particle *ne* before the next verb. Example:

Je n'y irai pas, à moins que *vous* ne *veniez avec moi*;
I will not go there, *unleſs* you come with me.

Je ne vous donnerai pas de montre, que *vous* ne *parliez François*;
I will not give you a watch, *until* you ſpeak French.

Obſ. That all the verbs and conjunctions mentioned in theſe two rules govern the verb in the ſubjunctive mood, (*ſi* excepted).

RULE 128. - - - ne *before the verb, and* que *after*, but *or* only.

When the words *but* or *only* come after a verb, without any ſtop between them, they are expreſſed by *ne* before it, and *que* after, not by *mais*. Example:

Je n'*ai* que *vingt guinées*; I have *but* twenty guineas.
Je n'*ai* qu'*un véritable ami*; I have *but* one true friend.

The word *only* after a verb is expreſſed by *ſeulement*; if before it, there is a conditional expreſſion. Example:

Si vous aviez ſeulement *deux amis de plus, vous réuſſiriez*; if you had *only* two friends more, you would ſucceed.

When *but* begins the ſecond part of a ſentence, it is uſually expreſſed by *mais*. Example:

Je voudrois bien voyager, mais *je n'ai pas d'argent*; I could wiſh to travel, *but* I have no money.

SYNTAX OF VERBS.

The verb is a part of ſpeech the moſt extenſive, the moſt eſſential, and altogether the moſt difficult either to teach or

to learn; therefore close attention must be given to the following pages, in which the construction of verbs is fully explained, and the different genius of the two languages is pointed out with accuracy and precision.

CHAPTER XIII.

Of the Government of Verbs.

RULE 129. - - - *Verbs which govern the Genitive in French.*

1. Most of the reflected verbs not mentioned in the next rule govern the genitive in French, whatever case they govern in English. Example:

S'appercevoir d'*un tour*,	To perceive a trick.
S'emparer de *quelque chose*,	To seize upon some thing.
S'enquérir de *nouvelles*.	To inquire about news.
Se ressouvenir d'*une histoire*,	To remember an history.

And so on for others.

2. The following, *abuser*, to abuse; *avoir besoin*, to want; *avoir pitié*, to pity; *être altéré*, to thirst after; *hériter*, to inherit; *jouir*, to enjoy; *manquer*, to want; *médire*, to traduce; *rendre raison*, to account for; *rougir*, to blush; *user*, to use; govern the genitive in French: Thus we say,

Avoir besoin d'*argent*,	To want money.
Avoir pitié des *malheureux*,	To pity the unfortunate.
Hériter d'un *gros bien*,	To inherit a large fortune.
Jouir d'une *bonne santé*,	To enjoy good health.
Médire de *son prochain*,	To traduce one's neighbour.

And so on for others.

3. The verbs passive followed in English by the prepositions *from*, or *with*, govern the genitive case in French. Example:

Il est chargé de *butin*,	He is loaded *with* spoil.

Ce livre est traduit de *l'Anglois*;
This book is translated *from* the English.

4. The word *by*, which comes sometimes after a verb

paſſive, is uſually expreſſed by *de*, when the verb does not expreſs any action of the body, and by *par* when it does: thus we ſay,

Votre frère a été tué par *deux voleurs*;
Your brother has been killed *by* two thieves.
Votre ſœur eſt eſtimée de *tout le monde*;
Your ſiſter is eſteemed *by* every body.

However, we make uſe of *par* to avoid the repetition of *de*, though the verb does not expreſs any action of the body. Example:

Votre ouvrage ſera cenſuré d'une *manière ſavère* par *les critiques*, (not des *critiques*); your work will be ſeverely cenſured by the critics.

RULE 130. - - - *Verbs which govern the Dative in French**.

1. The twenty-two following reflected verbs govern the Dative.

S'abandonner,	*To abandon one's ſelf.*
S'accoutumer,	*To accuſtom one's ſelf.*
S'adonner,	*To addict one's ſelf.*
S'amuſer,	*To amuſe one's ſelf.*
S'appliquer,	*To apply one's ſelf.*
S'aprêter,	*To diſpoſe one's ſelf.*
S'arêter,	*To ſtop.*
S'attacher,	*To ſtick to.*
S'addreſſer,	*To apply one's ſelf.*
Se déterminer,	*To reſolve upon.*
Se diſpoſer,	*To prepare one's ſelf.*
S'endurcir,	*To inure one's ſelf.*
S'engager,	*To engage.*
S'expoſer,	*To expoſe one's ſelf.*
Se fier,	*To truſt.*
S'habituer,	*To accuſtom one's ſelf.*
S'obſtiner,	*To be determined.*
S'opiniâtrer,	*To be determined.*
S'occuper,	*To employ one's ſelf.*
S'oppoſer,	*To oppoſe one's ſelf.*

* *See in the liſt at the end of this grammar, which caſe the verbs regular or irregular govern after them.*

Se plaire; *To take delight in.*
Se préparer, *To prepare one's ſelf.* Example:
Accoutumez-vous à *l'étude*; Accuſtom yourſelf to ſtudy,
Je m'applique aux *mathématiques*; I apply myſelf to mathematics.
Ne vous arrêtez pas à *Londres*; Do not ſtop in London.

2. The following verbs govern the dative in French, whatever caſe they govern in Engliſh:

Conſentir,	*to conſent:*	Penſer,	*to think of.*
Contrevenir,	*to infringe.*	Plaire,	*to pleaſe.*
Contribuer,	*to contribute.*	Renoncer,	*to renounce.*
Déplaire,	*to diſpleaſe.*	Remédier,	*to remedy.*
Déſobeir,	*to diſobey.*	Reſſembler,	*to reſemble.*
Nuire,	*to hurt.*	Réſiſter,	*to reſiſt.*
Obéir,	*to obey.*	Songer,	*to think of.*
Obvier,	*to obviate.*	Subvenir,	*to relieve.*
Pardonner,	*to forgive.*	Succédér,	*to ſucceed.*
Parvenir,	*to attain.*	Survivre,	*to out-live.*

Example:

Déplaire à *ſon maître,*	To diſpleaſe one's maſter.
Ne déſobéiſſez pas à *vos parents,*	Do not diſobey your parents.
Je pardonne à *mes ennemis,*	I forgive my enemies.
Il plait à *tout le monde,*	He pleaſes every body.
Je penſe à *votre affaire,*	I think of your buſineſs.

And ſo on for all others before-mentioned.

3. The following, *applaudir,* to applaud; *inſulter,* to inſult; *perſuader,* to perſuade; *renoncer,* to renounce; *rêver,* to dream; *travailler,* to work; ſometimes govern the accuſative caſe, but moſt frequently the dative: thus we ſay,
Vous inſultez tout *le monde,* Acc. *Vous inſultez* à *ma misère,* Dat.
You inſult every body. You inſult my misfortune.

RULE 131. - - - - *Verbs which govern the Accuſative in French.*

All verbs which can be turned by the paſſive voice govern the accuſative in French. Thus, for inſtance, I know that *aimer, eſtimer, punir, récompenſer, &c.* govern the accuſative, becauſe we can ſay, *il eſt aimé, il eſt eſtimé, il eſt puni, &c.*

By the ſame reaſon I know that the following verbs,

Accepter,	*to accept of.*	chercher,	*to look for.*
abattre,	*to pull down.*	combler,	*to fill up.*
admirer,	*to wonder at.*	critiquer,	*to cavil at.*
approuver,	*to approve of.*	déchirer,	*to tear off.*
attendre,	*to wait for.*	demander,	*to aſk for.*
dénoncer,	*to inform againſt.*	injurier,	*to rail at.*
déraciner,	*to root out.*	juger,	*to judge of.*
examiner,	*to examine into.*	lorgner,	*to leer on.*
époudrer,	*to wipe off.*	huer,	*to hoot at.*
paraphraſer,	*to comment upon.*	regarder,	*to look at.*

and ſome others which are attended by a prepoſition in Engliſh, govern the accuſative in French, becauſe they can be turned by the paſſive, and we can ſay for inſtance:

Votre offre a été acceptée. Your offer has been accepted.
Cet arbre a été abattu. This tree has been pulled down.
Votre conduite a été approuvée.
Your conduct has been approved.
And ſo on for others.

RULE 132. - - - *Verbs which govern the Acculative and Genitive Caſes.*

When the following verbs govern two nouns or pronouns, not joined by a conjunction, the firſt is put in the accuſative, and the ſecond in the genitive caſe in French.

Abſoudre,	*to abſolve.*	emplir,	*to fill.*
accabler,	*to overwhelm.*	enfreindre,	*to tranſgreſs.*
accepter,	*to accept.*	exclure,	*to exclude.*
accuſer,	*to accuſe.*	expulſer,	*to turn out.*
avertir,	*to warn.*	fléchir,	*to move.*
bannir,	*to baniſh.*	implorer,	*to implore.*
blâmer,	*to blame.*	informer,	*to inform.*
chaſſer,	*to expel.*	louer,	*to praiſe.*
corriger,	*to correct.*	ménacer,	*to threaten.*
débuſquer,	*to drive out.*	obtenir,	*to obtain.*
délivrer,	*to free.*	recevoir.	*to receive.*
dégoûter,	*to diſguſt.*	priver,	*to deprive.*
détourner,	*to divert.*	ſoupçonner,	*to ſuſpect.*
diſſuader,	*to diſſuade.*		

Example:

Accabler un ennemi d'injures;
To load an enemy with injuries.
Accepter les offres d'un ami; to accept the offers of a friend.
Emplir une bouteille de vin; to fill a bottle with wine.
Blâmer la conduite de quelqu'un; to blame one's conduct.
Exclure un menteur de la société;
To exclude a liar from society.

RULE 133. - - - *Verbs which govern the Acc. and Dat.*

When the following verbs govern two nouns or pronouns, that which has reference to persons is to be put in the dative in French, and the other in the accusative. If they have both reference to persons, that before which the preposition *to* is or could be prefixed is put in the dative, and the other in the accusative. No verb governs two accusative cases in French.

accorder,	*to grant.*	expliquer,	*to explain.*
addresser,	*to direct.*	ôter,	*to take away.*
annoncer,	*to announce.*	pardonner,	*to forgive.*
apporter,	*to bring.*	prédire,	*to foretell.*
attribuer,	*to attribute.*	préférer,	*to prefer.*
avouer,	*to own.*	présenter,	*to present.*
communiquer,	*to communicate.*	prêter,	*to lend.*
confesser,	*to confess.*	procurer,	*to procure.*
confier,	*to trust.*	promettre,	*to promise.*
conseiller,	*to advise.*	raconter,	*to relate.*
déclarer,	*to declare.*	rapporter,	*to bring back.*
dédier,	*to dedicate.*	rendre,	*to return.*
demander,	*to ask.*	réfuser,	*to refuse.*
devoir,	*to owe.*	renvoyer,	*to send back.*
dire,	*to tell.*	répéter,	*to repeat.*
donner,	*to give.*	réprocher,	*to reproach.*
écrire,	*to write.*	répondre,	*to answer.*
enseigner,	*to teach.*	révéler,	*to reveal.*
envoyer,	*to send.*	vendre,	*to sell.*

Example:

Accordez lui cette grace; grant him that favour.
Dites moi la vérité; tell me the truth.
Demander permission au maître; to beg the master's leave.
Réprocher une faute à quelqu'un;
To reproach one with a fault.

Obſervations.

Jouer governs the genitive, when it ſignifies *to play* on ſome muſical inſtruments, and the dative, when it ſignifies *to play* at ſome game. Example:

Vous jouez bien du *violon*, gen. *mais vous ne jouez pas bien* aux *cartes*; dat.

You play well on the violin, but you do not play well at cards.

Some verbs are followed in French by a prepoſition different from that uſed in Engliſh; ſuch are,

Cracher ſur *quelqu'un*; to ſpit *at* one*.

Faire feu ſur *l'ennemi*; to fire *at* the enemy.

S'ingérer dans *les affaires des autres*;

To intermeddle *with* other people's buſineſs.

Lutter contre *la mort*; to ſtruggle *with* death.

Tirer ſur *un lievre*; to ſhoot *at* a hare: and ſome others.

Moſt verbs which govern the genitive or ablative in Latin govern the genitive in French; and moſt of thoſe which govern the accuſative or dative in Latin require the ſame caſe in French. This obſervation will be of great uſe to thoſe who have learnt Latin.

CHAPTER XIV.

OF THE INFINITIVE MOOD.

As there are three tenſes in the infinitive mood, called, *preſent*, *gerund*, and *participle*, this chapter is naturally divided into three ſections: *the firſt* deſcribes the circumſtances in which a verb is put in the infinitive mood, without being preceded by any prepoſition; it explains alſo the caſes in

* *Theſe verbs are followed in French by the ſame prepoſition in all their tenſes.*

which it is preceded by *de*, by *à*, or by *pour*; *the ſecond* teaches that a gerund is always indeclinable in French, and gives an eaſy method to diſtinguiſh it from a verbal adjective, which is always declinable; *the third* eſtabliſhes two general rules, which explain when a participle is declinable or indeclinable.

SECTION THE FIRST.

Of the Infinitive Preſent.

The infinitive preſent is ſometimes uſed in French without any prepoſition before it; it is ſometimes preceded by *de*, ſometimes by *à*, ſometimes by *pour*, according to the following rules:

RULE 134. - - - *Infinitive without Prepoſition.*

A verb in the infinitive preſent has no prepoſition before it.

1. When it is ſubſtantively uſed, and is the nominative caſe of another verb. Example:

Trop parler, *eſt dangereux*;
To ſpeak too much, is dangerous.
Secourir *les pauvres*, *eſt une action digne de louange*;
To relieve the poor is a praiſe-worthy action.

2. When it is governed in the infinitive by any of the following verbs:

aller,	*to go.*	nier,	*to deny.*
croire,	*to believe.*	oſer,	*to dare.*
daigner,	*to deign.*	paroître,	*to appear.*
déclarer,	*to declare.*	prétendre,	*to pretend.*
déſirer,	*to wiſh.*	pouvoir,	*to be able.*
devoir,	*to owe.*	ſavoir,	*to know.*
entendre,	*to hear.*	ſembler,	*to appear.*
envoyer,	*to ſend.*	ſouhaiter,	*to wiſh.*
eſpérer,	*to hope.*	ſoutenir,	*to maintain.*
faire,	*to do.*	venir,	*to come.*
faloir,	*to be requiſite.*	voir,	*to ſee.*
laiſſer,	*to let.*	vouloir,	*to be willing.*

Example:

Allez voir *votre ami*; go and ſee your friend.
Croyez-vous avoir *raiſon*;
Do you believe you are in the right?
Daignez me répondre; deign to anſwer me.
Je ferai exécuter *vos ordres*;
I will cauſe your orders to be executed.
And ſo on for others.

Note. The verb *faire* is uſed for *to do, to make, to cauſe,* and *to oblige;* in all caſes it is immediately followed in French by the next verb, which it governs in the infinitive without prepoſition. Example: *je ferai* bâtir *une maiſon, je vous ferai* faire *votre thême.*

RULE 135. - - - *Infinitive with* de.

We put the prepoſition *de* before a verb in the infinitive mood.

1. Moſt commonly when it is preceded by a *ſubſtantive* which governs it. Example:

Il eſt temps de *partir*; it is time to ſet out.
Vous n'avez pas ſujet d'*être fâché contre moi*;
You have no cauſe to be angry with me.

2. Moſt commonly when it is preceded by the verb *être,* and any other adjectives than thoſe mentioned in the next rule. Example:

Il eſt glorieux de *pardonner à ſes ennemis*;
It is glorious to forgive one's enemies.
Il eſt dangereux de *ſe fier à tout le monde*;
It is dangerous to truſt every body.

3. Moſt commonly when it is governed by any other reflected verbs than thoſe mentioned in the rule 130. Exam.

Je me repents d'*en avoir parlé, puiſque cela vous déplait*;
I am ſorry I ſpoke of it, ſince that diſpleaſes you.
Il ſe propoſe d'*aller vous voir demain au ſoir*;
He has a mind to go and ſee you to-morrow evening.

4. When it is governed in the infinitive by any of the following verbs:

accuſer de,	*to accuſe.*	mériter de,	*to deſerve.*
affecter de,	*to affect.*	négliger de,	*to neglect.*
avertir de,	*to adviſe.*	offrir de,	*to offer.*
blâmer de,	*to blame.*	omettre de,	*to omit.*
ceſſer de,	*to ceaſe.*	ordonner de,	*to order.*
commander de,	*to command.*	oublier de,	*to forget.*
conjurer de,	*to intreat.*	parler de,	*to ſpeak.*
conſeiller de,	*to adviſe.*	permettre de,	*to permit.*
craindre de,	*to fear.*	perſuader de,	*to perſuade.*
détourner de,	*to deter.*	plaindre de,	*to pity.*
defendre de,	*to forbid.*	preſſer de,	*to urge.*
differer,	*to differ.*	preſcrire de,	*to preſcribe.*
dire de,	*to tell.*	prier de,	*to pray.*
diſpenſer de,	*to excuſe.*	promettre de,	*to promiſe.*
diſſuader de,	*to diſſuade.*	propoſer de,	*to propoſe.*
écrire de,	*to write.*	refuſer de,	*to refuſe.*
empêcher de,	*to hinder.*	remercier de,	*to thank.*
enjoindre de,	*to enjoin.*	réſoudre de,	*to reſolve.*
entreprendre de,	*to undertake.*	ſommer de,	*to ſummon.*
eſſayer de,	*to try.*	ſoupçonner de,	*to ſuſpect.*
feindre de,	*to feign.*	ſupplier de,	*to beg.*
finir de,	*to finiſh.*	tâcher de,	*to endeavour.*
menacer de,	*to threaten.*		

Example:

Il ne ceſſe de *ſe plaindre*; he does not ceaſe complaining *.
Je vous conſeille de *reſter ici*; I adviſe you to ſtay here.
Je vous prie de *lui pardonner*; I beg of you to forgive him.

RULE 136. - - - *Infinitive with* à.

We moſt commonly put the prepoſition *à* before an infinitive: 1, after the adjectives which denote inclination, aptneſs, fitneſs, unfitneſs, or repugnancy; and particularly after the following, ſet in an alphabetical order:

* *The gerund is often uſed in Engliſh after the prepoſitions* of, in, after, *or* without; *but the infinitive muſt always be uſed in French after a prepoſition* (en *excepted*).

adroit,	*dexterous in.*	enclin,	*inclined to.*
affreux,	*dreadful to.*	exact,	*exact in.*
agréable,	*agreeable to.*	facile,	*easy to.*
aiſé,	*easy to.*	habile,	*skilful in.*
ardent,	*eager in.*	lent,	*slow in.*
aſſidu,	*aſſiduous in.*	porté,	*inclined to.*
beau,	*fine to.*	le premier,	*the first to.*
bon,	*good to.*	le dernier,	*the last to.*
charmant,	*charming to.*	prêt,	*ready to.*
curieux,	*curious to.*	prompt,	*quick in.*
diligent,	*diligent in.*	propre,	*fit for.*
diſpoſé,	*diſpoſed to.*	ſujet,	*liable to.*
déſagréable,	*diſagreeable to.*	terrible,	*dreadful to.*

Example:

Vous êtes adroit à *tout faire*;
You are dexterous in doing every thing.
Je ſuis diſpoſé à *vous obliger*; I am diſpoſed to oblige you.
Ce fruit eſt bon à *manger*; that fruit is good to eat.

The following verbs alſo govern the infinitive with *à*.

admettre,	*to admit.*	employer,	*to employ.*
accoutumer,	*to accuſtom.*	encourager,	*to encourage.*
aider,	*to help.*	engager,	*to engage.*
aimer,	*to like.*	exhorter,	*to exhort.*
apprendre,	*to learn.*	inviter,	*to invite.*
authoriſer,	*to authoriſe.*	penſer,	*to think of.*
condamner,	*to condemn.*	perſiſter,	*to perſiſt in.*
chercher,	*to endeavour.*	porter,	*to induce to.*
conſiſter,	*to conſiſt.*	pouſſer,	*to excite to.*
diſpoſer,	*to diſpoſe to.*	reſter,	*to ſtay.*
donner,	*to give.*	travailler,	*to work.*

Ne vous accoutumez pas à *jouer*;
Do not accuſtom yourſelf to play.
J'apprends à *danſer*, *j'aime* à *chanter*;
I learn to dance, I like to ſing, &c.

3. The reflected verbs, *s'abbandonner*, *s'accoutumer*, *s'adonner*, and others mentioned before, (rule 130) govern the infinitive with the preposition *à*. Example:

Diſpoſez-vous à *me répondre*;
Prepare yourſelf to anſwer me.

4. A verb is moſt frequently put in the infinitive with *à*, when it comes after the word *avoir*, and a ſubſtantive, or an adverb ſignifying a thing to be done. Example:

Je n'ai point d'argent à *prêter*; I have no money to lend.

RULE 137. - - - *Infinitive with* de *or* à.

The verb *manquer* uſually governs the infinitive with *de*, when it is negatively uſed, and with *à* when affirmatively. Example:

Je ne manquerai pas de *vous punir, ſi vous manquez* à *faire votre devoir*;
I will not fail *to* puniſh you, if you neglect *to* do your exerciſe.

Tarder governs the infinitive with *de*, when it ſignifies *to long*, and with *à*, when it ſignifies *to delay*. Example:

Il me tarde de *voir votre frère, il tarde bien* à *venir*;
I long *to* ſee your brother, he delays a long time *to* come.

Venir governs the infinitive without prepoſition, when it ſignifies *to come*; it governs the infinitive with *de*, when it ſignifies a *thing juſt happened*; and with *à*, when it ſignifies *to happen*. Example:

Venez me voir demain; come and ſee me to-morrow.
Mon père vient de *ſortir*; my father is juſt gone out.
S'il vient à *pleuvoir, vous ſerez mouillé*;
If it happens *to* rain, you will be wet.

The following, *commencer, continuer, contraindre, engager, exhorter, forcer, s'efforcer, obliger*, and *tâcher*, govern the infinitive with *de* or *à*, according as it ſounds beſt. See Wailly, page 233.

RULE 138. - - - *Infinitive with* pour.

We uſe in French the prepoſition *pour* before an infinitive, to expreſs the *end*, the *deſign*, or the *cauſe* for which a thing is done, and, in general, every time the ſentence could be turned, by *in order*, without altering the ſenſe of it. Exam.

Je ſuis venu pour *vous voir*; I am come to ſee you.
Je ferai tout pour *vous obliger*;
I will do every thing to oblige you.

Les hommes ſont nés pour *vivre en ſociété*;
Men are born to live in ſociety.

The prepoſition *pour* is alſo uſed after the words, *aſſez*, enough; *trop*, too much; *ſuffire* and *ſuffiſant*, to be ſufficient. Example:

Vous êtes aſſez grand pour *être ſoldat, mais vous êtes trop lâche* pour *vous engager*;
You are tall enough to be a ſoldier, but you are too great a coward to enliſt.

Note. When the prepoſition *for* comes before a gerund, it is expreſſed in French by *pour*, with the infinitive preſent, if the verb has reference to a preſent or future time, and with the compound of the preſent, if it refers to a paſt time. Ex.

Combien me demandez-vous pour *me faire un habit?*
How much do you aſk for making me a ſuit of clothes?
Il fut pendu pour *avoir volé*; he was hanged for robbing.

RULE 139. - - - *Infinitive with* ſans.

An Engliſh gerund, preceded by the prepoſition *without*, is rendered in French by the infinitive preſent with *ſans*. Example:

On ne peut trahir la vérité ſans *ſe rendre coupable*;
One cannot ſpeak againſt the truth without *being guilty*.
Nous ne devons rien entreprendre ſans avoir *conſulté Dieu, & imploré ſon aſſiſtance divine*;
We ſhould never undertake any thing, without *having* conſulted the will of God, and implored his divine aſſiſtance.

SECTION THE SECOND.

Of the Gerund.

All gerunds end in *ant* in French, and are indeclinable; many adjectives derived from verbs end alſo in *ant*, and are declinable; the following rule teaches how to diſtinguiſh them invariably:

RULE 140. - - - *The Gerund is always indeclinable in French.*

A word ending in Engliſh in *ing*, and in *ant* in French, is an adjective when it precedes the ſubſtantive in Engliſh, and a gerund when it comes after; in the firſt caſe it agrees in French with the ſubſtantive to which it is joined; it is always indeclinable in the ſecond. Example:

Decl.
- *Une dame* obligeante; an obliging lady *.
- *Une preuve* convainquante; a convincing proof.
- *Des brebis* bêlantes; bleating ſheep.
- *Des effets* ſurprenants; ſurpriſing effects.

Indecl.
- *Une dame* obligeant *ſes amis* (not *obligeante*);
  A lady obliging her friends.
- *Une preuve* convainquant *tout le monde*, for *qui convainc*;
  A proof convincing every body.

You may obſerve, from the preceding examples, that a word ending in *ant* in French is an adjective when it qualifies the ſubſtantive to which it is joined, and a gerund when it governs a ſubſtantive after it.

RULE 141. - - - *When the Engliſh Gerund is rendered by the Indicative.*

When an Engliſh gerund has reference to a ſubſtantive which is not in the nominative caſe, it is rendered in French by a verb in the indicative mood. Example:

Alexandre demanda aux medecins qui ſe tenoient *au tour de lui, s'il mourroit de ſa maladie*; (not *aux medecins ſe tenant*);

Alexander aſked the phyſicians *ſtanding* by him, if he ſhould die of his illneſs.

RULE 142. - - - by *expreſſed by* en.

An Engliſh gerund, preceded by the prepoſition *by*, is always rendered in French by the gerund with en. Example:

* *Obſerve, from this and the following examples, that the words ending in* ant *go after the ſubſtantive in French, whether they be adjectives or gerunds.*

Nous avons obtenu la paix en feſant *de grands ſacrifices*;
We have obtained peace, *by making* great ſacrifices.
On acquiére plus de gloire en defendant *qu'en* accuſant *ſes concitoyens*;
More glory is acquired *by defending* than *by accuſing* one's fellow citizens.

Note 1. An Engliſh gerund, preceded by the prepoſitions *of, from, without, after, for,* &c. is put in French in the infinitive, with *de, à, pour,* or *ſans,* (as we have ſeen before) and not in the gerund.

Note 2. An Engliſh gerund, preceded by the verb *to be,* is put in French in the ſame tenſe of the indicative, as is the verb *to be,* which is not expreſſed. Example:
Je parle; I am ſpeaking. *Je danſois*; I was dancing.
Que faites-vous ici? what are you doing here?

Note 3. An Engliſh gerund, preceded by the definite article *the,* is rendered by a ſubſtantive in French. Example:
L'étude des langues eſt difficile;
The learning of languages is difficult.

SECTION THE THIRD.

Of the Participle.

RULE 143. - - - *When the Participle is declinable in French.*

A participle is always declinable in French as an adjective.
1. When it is joined to a ſubſtantive. Example:
Un livre bien écrit; *une lettre bien* écrite;
A book well written; a letter well written.

2. After the verb *être**, or any other than *avoir*. Exam.

* *If, however, the verb* être *is preceded by the perſonal pronouns* me, te, ſe, nous, vous *in the dative caſe, the participle which comes after ſhould be indeclinable; thus we ſay, mes ſœurs, ſe ſont* propoſé *d'aller vous voir, and not ſe ſont* propoſées, *becauſe* ſe *is in the dative, and ſtands for* à ſoi.

Mon frère eſt fatigué; *ma ſœur eſt* fatiguée:
My brother is tired; my ſiſter is tired.
Votre père paroît affligé; *votre mère paroît affligée*;
Your father appears afflicted; your mother appears afflicted.

3. After the verb *avoir*, when the noun or pronoun antecedent is governed by the participle, which is known when, giving the ſentence another turn, it could be put immediately after. Example:

La terre que j'ai vendue *eſt bonne et fertile*;
The farm which I have *ſold* is good and fruitful.
Les livres que j'ai achetés *ſont neufs*;
The books I have *bought* are new.
Les régles que j'ai expliquées *ſont difficiles*;
The rules which I have *explained* are difficult.

The participle agrees in theſe examples with the nouns *terre*, *livres*, and *régles*, which are governed by it, ſince they can be placed immediately after, giving the ſentence another turn; for we can ſay, *j'ai vendu une terre*, *j'ai acheté des livres*, *j'ai expliqué des régles*.

RULE 144. - - - *When the Participle is indeclinable.*

The participle is indeclinable after the verb *avoir*, in three caſes.

1. When the noun or pronoun antecedent is not governed by the participle, but by the verb following, which is known when giving the ſentence another turn, the noun antecedent comes after the infinitive, and not after the participle. Ex.

La maiſon que je vous ai conſeillé *d'acheter eſt neuve*;
The houſe which I have *adviſed* you to buy is a new one.
Les régles que j'ai commencé *à expliquer ſont faciles*;
The rules which I have *begun* to explain are eaſy.

The participles *conſeillé* and *commencé* are indeclinable, becauſe we can ſay, *acheter une maiſon*, and not *conſeiller une maiſon*.

2. When it governs a noun or a pronoun after it. Exam.

Votre mère a parlé *au Roi* (not *a parlée*);
Your mother has ſpoken to the King.
Vos ſœurs ont appris *le françois* (not *ont appriſes*);
Your ſiſters have learnt French.

3. When there is no other noun or pronoun antecedent than the nominative of the verb. Example:

Il a étudié. *Elle a* chanté. *Elles ont* écouté.
He has ſtudied. She has ſung. They have liſtened.

Theſe two rules are altogether eſſential, and very difficult to underſtand for children, therefore the maſter is deſired to inſiſt upon them.

Concord of the Verb with its Nominative.

RULE 145. - - - *The Verb agrees with its Nominative.*

All the perſonal verbs agree in numbers and perſons with their nominative caſe. Example:

Je donne; *Nous donnons*. I give; We give, &c.
Mon père eſt *mort*; *Mes frères* ſont *morts*;
My father is dead; My brothers are dead.

RULE 146. - - - *The verb agrees with the moſt worthy Perſon.*

When a verb has ſeveral nominative caſes of different perſons, it is put in the plural of the moſt worthy perſon. The *firſt* perſon is more worthy than the *ſecond*, and the *ſecond* is more worthy than the *third*.

The verb takes then for its nominative caſe, a perſonal pronoun of the moſt worthy perſon, beſides thoſe uſed in Engliſh. Example:

Mon frère & moi, nous allons *ce ſoir à la comédie*;
My brother and I will go to-night to the play.
Vous & votre ſœur, vous reſterez *à la maiſon*;
You and your ſiſter will ſtay at home.

A verb is put in the third perſon plural, in both languages, when it has for its nominative caſe two ſubſtantives ſingular, joined by a copulative conjunction. Example:

Homere et Virgile ſont *les princes des Poëtes*;
Homer and Virgil are the princes of Poets.
Le papier & l'encre ne valent *rien*;
The paper and ink are good for nothing.

RULE 147. - - - - The Verb agrees, &c.

The pronoun *qui* requires the verb following in the ſame number and perſon as the ſubſtantive or pronoun antecedent. Example:

C'eſt moi qui l'ai vu; It is I who have ſeen him.
C'eſt lui qui l'a fait; It is he who has done it.
C'eſt vous qui en avez *parlé*;
It is you who have ſpoken of it.
*Ce ſont eux qui l'*ont *pris*; it is they who have taken it.

Some uſeful Obſervations.

1. When the Engliſh addreſs God, they put the pronoun and verb in the ſingular; the French, on the contrary, put them in the ſecond perſon plural in proſe. Example:

Notre père qui êtes *aux cieux*, votre *nom ſoit ſanctifié, &c.**
Our father who *art* in heaven, hallowed be *thy* name, &c.

2. The pronouns and verbs are uſually put in the ſecond perſon plural in both languages, when we ſpeak to one perſon, but the adjective, if there is any, remains in the ſingular. Example:

Monſieur, vous êtes très obligeant.;
Sir, you are very obliging.

3. The third perſon is elegantly uſed inſtead of the ſecond, when we ſpeak to perſons for whom we have ſome conſideration. Example:

Madame veut-elle *venir au parc?* for *voulez-vous*, &c.
Madam, will you come to the park?

4. The ſecond perſon ſingular is often uſed in French between intimate friends, and alſo between brothers and ſiſters, huſband and wife, &c. as, viens-*ici*, *mon frère*; come here, brother, (for venez-ici).

* Not *notre père qui* es *aux cieux*, ton *nom ſoit ſanctifié*, *as we find in ſome prayer-books printed in England.*

5. Poets and orators uſe the ſecond perſon ſingular, when they addreſs God, Heroes, or Sovereigns, as you may obſerve in the following Sonnet of *Deſbarreaux*:

Grand Dieu, *tes* jugements ſont remplis d'équité.
Toujours *tu prends* plaiſir à nous être propice.
Mais j'ai tant fait de mal, que jamais *ta* bonté
Ne me pardonnera qu'en bleſſant *ta* juſtice.
Oui, Seigneur, la grandeur de mon impiété
Ne laiſſe à *ton* pouvoir que le choix du ſupplice.
Ton intérêt s'oppoſe à ma félicité,
Et *ta* clémence même attend que je périſſe.
Contente ton déſir, puiſqu'il *t'*eſt glorieux,
Offenſe-toi des pleurs qui coulent de mes yeux:
Tonne, frappe, il eſt temps, *rends-moi* guerre pour guerre.
J'adore en périſſant la raiſon qui *t'*aigrit.
Mais deſſus quel endroit tombera *ton* tonnerre,
Qui ne ſoit tout couvert du ſang de Jeſus-Chriſt.

CHAPTER XV.

Of the Indicative Mood.

RULE 148. - - - - *When the Preſent of the Indicative is uſed.*

The preſent of the indicative, as *je parle*, I ſpeak; *je fais*, I do; *je reçois*, I receive, &c. is uſed in French.

1. To expreſs a thing which is preſent in the time in which we are ſpeaking. Example:

Il pleut, it rains. *Je ſuis malade*, I am ſick.

2. To expreſs a thing which we do habitually, though not in the moment in which we are ſpeaking. Example:

J'apprends le François; I learn French.
Vous allez *ſouvent à la comédie*; You go often to the play.

3. To expreſs a thing which is of eternal truth. Example:

Dieu eſt *miſericordieux*; God is merciful.
Les hommes ſont *mortels*; Men are mortal.

4. To expreſs in a more lively and emphatical manner a thing happened in a time quite paſt. Example:

J'ai vû votre frère entraîné par ſes chevaux, il veut *les rappeller, ſa voix les* effraie, *ils* courent, *tout ſon corps n'*eſt *qu'une plaie.*

I have ſeen your brother dragged by his horſes, he called to them to ſtop; his cries frightened them, they ran on, till his body was but one wound.

5. To expreſs a future time not diſtant, when there is in the ſentence a word which denotes futurity. Example:

Je parts *ce ſoir pour Londres*; for *je partirai.*

I ſhall ſet out to night for London.

Je ſuis *prêt dans un moment*; I ſhall be ready in a moment.

RULE 149. - - - When the Imperfect of the Indicative is uſed.

The imperfect of the indicative, as *je parlois*, I did ſpeak; *je recevois*, I did receive, &c. is uſed in French,

1. To expreſs a thing which is paſt the time in which we are ſpeaking, but which was preſent when another thing mentioned in the ſame ſentence happened. The verb which is, or could be, rendered in Engliſh by the gerund, with *was* or *were*, is invariably put in the imperfect in French, and the other moſt commonly in the preterite. Example:

Je vous écrivois *une lettre, quand je reçus la vôtre*;

I was writing you a letter when I received yours.

Nous dînions, *quand nous apprîmes cette fâcheuſe nouvelle*;

We were dining when we learnt that ſad news.

2. To expreſs the inclinations, habits, cuſtoms, manners, profeſſions, titles, good or bad qualities of the nations, or of the particular individuals we are ſpeaking of, when they are dead, and there is no ſpecification of time in the ſentence. Example:

Les Romains cultivoient *les arts*, encourageoient *les ſciences*, & récompenſoient *le mérite*;

The Romans cultivated the arts, encouraged ſciences, and rewarded merit.

Nos ancêtres alloient *tous les jours à la chaſſe, & ne* vivoient *que de gibier*;
Our anceſtors went a hunting every day, and lived upon game.
Céſar étoit *un grand général. Cicéron* étoit *un grand orateur.*
Cæſar was a great general. Cicero was a great orator.
Louis Seize étoit *un bon Roi*;
Lewis the ſixteenth was a good king.

3. If the perſons are living, we uſe the imperfect, when the time is determined; and the compound of the preſent, when it is not. Example:

Votre mère étoit *belle avant de ſe marier*;
Your mother was handſome before ſhe married.
Votre père a couru *de grands dangers*;
Your father has been expoſed to great dangers.
Quand j'étois *jeune* j'allois *ſouvent à la comédie*;
When I was young, I uſed to go to the play.

RULE 150. - - - *When the Preterite of the Indicative is uſed.*

The preterite of the indicative (as *je parlai*, I ſpoke; *je fis*, I did; *je reçus*, I received, &c.) is uſed in French, to expreſs a particular fact or event which has happened but once, or very ſeldom, and in a time quite paſt. Example:

Les Romains chaſſèrent *Tarquin de Rome*;
The Romans expelled Tarquin from Rome.
Céſar fut *tué dans le Sénat*;
Cæſar was killed in the Senate.
Cicéron eut *la tête tranchée*;
Cicero had his head cut off.
J'allai hier voir votre père;
I went yeſterday to ſee your father.

RULE 151. - - - *When the Compound of the Preſent is uſed.*

The compound of the preſent (as *j'ai parlé*, I have ſpoken; *j'ai fait*, I have done; *j'ai reçu*, I have received, &c.) is uſed in French to expreſs a thing paſt, but in a time not quite elapſed. A time is not elapſed, when the pronoun *this* or *our* are, or could be, prefixed to the words *age, year, month, week,* or *day*, mentioned in the ſentence. Example:

Notre ſiecle a produit *de grands hommes* (not *produiſit*, nor *produiſoit*);
Our age has produced great men.
Nous avons eu *beaucoup de compagnie cet hiver* (not *nous eûmes*);
We had much company this winter.

Uſeful Obſervations.

From the three preceding rules it appears, that a verb which is in the imperfect in Engliſh, may ſometimes be put in three different tenſes in French.

1. In the *imperfect*, when it expreſſes a thing habitual, or which was preſent when another thing happened. Example:
Quand j'étois à la campagne, je me promenois *ſouvent*;
When I was in the country, I walked often.
J'étois *malade quand vous êtes venu*;
I was ſick when you came.

2. In the *preterite*, when it denotes a particular fact, which happened in a time quite paſt. A time is paſt when the pronouns *this* or *our* could not be prefixed to it. Example:
Je me promenai *hier*; I walked yeſterday.
Je fus *malade la ſemaine dernière*; I was ſick laſt week.

3. In the *compound of the preſent*, when the time is not quite paſt. Example:
Je me ſuis promené *ce matin pendant deux heures*;
I walked this morning for two hours.
J'ai été *bien malade cette ſemaine*;
I was very ſick this week.

Obſ. I have repeated the ſame examples, to render more obvious the diſtinction between the imperfect, the preterite, and the compound of the preſent.

RULE 152. - - - *When the future of the Indicative is uſed.*

The future of the indicative (as, *je parlerai, je ferai, je recevrai*, &c.) is uſed in French as in Engliſh, to expreſs a future time. Example:

Nos corps reſſuſciteront *au jour du jugement* ;
Our bodies will riſe again in the day of judgment.

The Engliſh often uſe the preſent tenſe, or at leaſt leave out the mark of the future, after the conjunctions, *when, as ſoon as,* or *after,* when they want to expreſs a thing to come; the future muſt be uſed in French. Example :

Auſſitôt que j'aurai *diné, je ſortirai pour aller vous voir* ;
As ſoon as I *have* dined, I will go to ſee you.
Vous jouerez quand vous aurez *fini votre thême* ;
You will play, when you *have* finiſhed your exerciſe.

RULE 153. - - - *When the Conditional Tenſe is uſed.*

The conditional tenſe (as, *je parlerois,* I would ſpeak; *je ferois,* I would do; *je recevrois,* I would receive, &c.) which ſome Grammarians call the imperfect of the ſubjunctive, is uſed in French as in Engliſh, to expreſs a conditional ſentence. Example :

Nous ſerions *heureux ſi nous ſavions fixer nos déſirs* ;
We ſhould be happy, if we knew how to fix our deſires.
Quand vous ſeriez *riche, vous ne* ſeriez *pas plus heureux* ;
Though you ſhould be rich, yet you would not be more happy.

No future nor conditional after ſi.

When the conjunction *ſi* ſignifies *whether,* the future and conditional are uſed after it in French as in Engliſh. Exam.

Je ne ſais s'il ſera *beau tems demain* ;
I do not know *if* (or *whether*) it will be good weather to-morrow.
Je doute ſi mon frère viendroit *ſi je l'en priois* ;
I doubt if (or whether) my brother would come, ſhould I deſire him.

But when the conjunction *ſi* ſignifies *ſuppoſe that,* the Engliſh future muſt be rendered in French by the preſent, and the conditional by the imperfect. Example :

Vous deviendrez ſavant, ſi vous étudiez *bien,* (not *ſi vous étudirez* ;
You will become a learned man, if you *will ſtudy* well.
Je deviendrois riche, ſi je continuois *mon commerce,* (not *ſi je continuerois* ;
I ſhould become rich, if I *would continue* my trade.

RULE 154. - - - *When the Compound Tenſes are uſed.*

The compound of the imperfect (as, *j'avois parlé, j'avois fait, j'avois reçu,* &c.) is uſed in French to expreſs a thing done before another. Example:

Le Roi avoit nommé *un Amiral, quand on lui parla de vous.*
The King *had named* an Admiral, when he heard of you.

The compound of the preterite (as, *j'eus parlé, j'eus fait, j'eus reçu,* &c.) is uſed to expreſs a particular fact happened in a time quite paſt, and particularly after the conjunctions *quand, dèſque, auſſitôt que, après que.* Example:

Dès que le Parlement fut aſſemblé, *l'émeute ceſſa;*
As ſoon as the Parliament *was aſſembled,* the riot ceaſed.

The compound of the future and conditional are generally uſed in French as in Engliſh, and as they offer no difficulty, they require no explanation.

CHAPTER XVI.

Of the Uſe of the Subjunctive Mood.

This chapter is divided into three ſections. The *firſt* enumerates the adjectives, pronouns, verbs and conjunctions, which always govern the ſubjunctive mood. The *ſecond* treats of the verbs and conjunctions which govern the following verb, ſometimes in the indicative, and ſometimes in the ſubjunctive, and points out in what circumſtances each mood muſt be uſed. The *third* explains when the verbs, governed in the ſubjunctive, muſt be put in the preſent, when in the preterite, and when in the compound tenſes.

SECTION THE FIRST.

Words which always govern the Subjunctive Mood.

RULE 155. - - - *The Subjunctive is uſed after a Superlative.*

A verb preceded by *qui* or *que* is put in the ſubjunctive.

1. After a ſuperlative, as we ſaid before, rule 43. Example:

La meilleure garde qu'un roi puiſſe *avoir, eſt le cœur de ſes ſujets*;
The beſt guard a king can have, is the heart of his ſubjects.

Vous êtes le plus ſavant que je connoiſſe *dans cette ville*;
You are the moſt learned man I know in this town.

2. After theſe five indeterminate pronouns, *quelque*, whatever; *qui que ce ſoit*, whoever; *perſonne*, nobody; *pas un*, not one; *aucun*, none; *rien*, nothing; as we ſaid before, ſpeaking of indeterminate pronouns, rule 109, and following. Ex.

De qui que ce ſoit que vous parliez *évitez la médiſance*;
Of whomſoever you ſpeak, avoid ſlander.

Je ne connois perſonne qui ſoit *auſſi heureux que vous*;
I know nobody who is ſo happy as you are.

Je n'ai rien vu qu'on puiſſe *blâmer dans votre conduite*;
I have ſeen nothing reprehenſible in your conduct.

3. After the ordinal numbers, as, *le premier*, the firſt; *le ſecond*, the ſecond; *le troiſième*, the third; *le dernier*, the laſt, &c. Example:

Vous êtes le premier ami que j'aie *rencontré à Londres*;
You are the firſt friend I have met with in London.

4. After theſe three words, *le ſeul, l'unique*, the only one, and *jamais* never. Example:

Mon fils eſt le ſeul, ſur qui je puiſſe *compter*;
My ſon is the only one upon whom I can rely.

Je ne croirai jamais, qu'il veuille *y conſentir*;
I ſhall never believe he will conſent to it.

RULE 156. - - - *The Subjunctive is uſed after the Verbs of* fear *or* doubt.

A verb preceded by *qui* or *que* is always put in the ſub-

junctive, after the verbs which expreſs any doubt, wiſh, command, order, fear, ignorance, or any affection of the mind, and particularly after the eighteen following:

Commander,	*to command.*	déſirer,	*to wiſh.*
craindre,	*to fear.*	douter,	*to doubt.*
defendre,	*to forbid.*	être bien aiſe,	*to be glad.*
être content,	*to be ſatisfied.*	nier,	*to deny.*
être étonné,	*to wonder.*	ordonner,	*to order.*
être fâché,	*to be ſorry.*	prier,	*to pray.*
être ſurpris,	*to be ſurpriſed.*	ſe réjouir,	*to rejoice.*
s'étonner,	*to wonder.*	ſouhaiter,	*to wiſh.*
ignorer,	*to be ignorant.*	vouloir,	*to be willing.*

Example:

Je crains que mon père ne ſoit *mort*;
I fear my father is dead.
Je déſire que vous réuſſiſſiez; I wiſh you may ſucceed.
Je doute qu'il ſoit *arrivé*; I doubt that he is come.
Je ſouhaite qu'on faſſe *la paix*;
I wiſh they would make peace.
Je veux qu'il m'obéiſſe; I will have him obey me.
And ſo on for others before mentioned.

RULE 157. - - - *The Subjunctive is uſed after ſome Impersonal Verbs.*

A verb preceded by *qui* or *que* is always put in the ſubjunctive, after the impersonal, *il faut*, it muſt; *il eſt facheux*, it is ſad; *il eſt juſte*, it is juſt; *il eſt injuſte*, it is unjuſt; *il convient*, it becomes; *il importe*, it matters; and generally after all thoſe not mentioned in the next ſection, rule 160.
Example:

Il eſt néceſſaire qu'il y ait *un Dieu créateur de l'univers*;
It is neceſſary that there is a God creator of the univerſe.
Il faut que j'aille *en ville*; I muſt go to town.
Il eſt juſte qu'il la voie; It is juſt that he ſhould ſee her.
And ſo on for others.

RULE 158. - - - *The Subjunctive is uſed after ſome Conjunctions.*

A verb is always put in the ſubjunctive mood after the twenty following conjunctions:

Afin que,	*that.*	malgré que,	*for all that.*
a moins que,	*unleſs.*	non obſtant que,	*for all that.*
avant que,	*before,*	non que, non pas que,	*not that.*
bien que,	*though.*	poſé que,	*ſuppoſe that.*
de crainte que,	*for fear.*	pour que,	*that.*
de peur que,	*leſt.*	pourvu que,	*provided.*
en cas que,	*if.*	quoique,	*though.*
encore que,	*though.*	ſans que,	*without.*
juſqu'à ce que,	*till.*	ſoit que,	*whether.*
loin que,	*far from.*	ſuppoſé que,	*ſuppoſe that.*

Example:

*A moins que vous ne m'*accompagniez, *je ne ſortirai pas*;
Unleſs you come with me, I will not go out.
Bien qu'il ſoit *pareſſeux, il fait beaucoup de progrès*;
Though he *is* lazy, yet he improves much.
Envoyez-moi votre livre, afin que je le liſe;
Send me your book, that I may read it.
Je ſerai prêt avant qu'ils ſoient *venus*;
I will be ready before they are come.

N. B. The ſubjunctive is always uſed in the beginning of a ſentence, to expreſs ſurpriſe, an imprecation, or an ardent deſire. Example:

Puiſſiez *vous être heureux!* May you be happy!
Que je meure, *ſi je ne me venge!*
May I rather die, than not revenge!

SECTION THE SECOND.

Verbs and Conjunctions which govern, ſometimes the Indicative, and ſometimes the Subjunctive.

RULE 159. - - - *Verbs which govern the Indicative and Subjunctive.*

The following verbs:

Affirmer,	*to affirm.*	Appercevoir,	*to perceive.*
Aſſurer,	*to aſſure.*	Avouer,	*to confeſs.*
Conclure,	*to conclude.*	Penſer,	*to think.*

Convenir,	*to agree.*	Prédire,	*to foretell.*
Croire,	*to believe.*	Prévoir,	*to foreſee.*
Déclarer,	*to declare.*	Promettre,	*to promiſe.*
Dire,	*to ſay.*	Publier,	*to publiſh.*
Eſpérer,	*to hope.*	Songer,	*to think.*
Juger,	*to judge.*	Soutenir,	*to maintain.*
Jurer,	*to ſwear.*	Suppoſer,	*to ſuppoſe.*
Maintenir,	*to maintain.*	Voir,	*to ſee.*
Oublier,	*to forget.*	Savoir,	*to know.*

And in general all thoſe which expreſs the intellectual faculties of the mind, govern the indicative, when they are affirmatively uſed, and moſt commonly the ſubjunctive when they are uſed negatively, interrogatively, or are preceded by the conjunction *ſi*. Example:

Je crois qu'il a *raiſon*, indicative; *croyez-vous qu'il* ait *raiſon? je ne crois pas qu'il* ait *raiſon*, ſubjunctive.

I believe he *is* in the right; do you believe he *is* in the right? I do not believe he *is* in the right.

J'eſpére qu'il viendra, indicative; *Eſpérez-vous qu'il* vienne? ſubjunctive;

I hope he *will come*; Do you hope he *will come?*

Partons, ſi vous penſez qu'il faſſe *beau tems*; ſubj.

Let us go on, if you think it *will be* good weather.

If we aſk a queſtion, leſs to be informed of a thing than to inform others of it, the ſecond verb is put in the indicative, and not in the ſubjunctive. Example:

Vous ai-je dit que mon père eſt *mort?* indicative;

Have I told you that my father *is* dead?

Vous apperçutes-vous qu'on vouloit *me tromper?* indic.

Did you perceive they *wanted* to deceive me?

RULE 160. - - - *Impersonal, which govern the Indicative and Subjunctive.*

The impersonal verbs denoting *evidence, certitude,* or *probability* of a thing (ſuch as, *il eſt clair,* it is clear; *il eſt certain,* it is certain; *il eſt vrai,* it is true; *il eſt probable,* it is probable, &c.), govern the next verb in the indicative, when they are affirmatively uſed, and moſt frequently in the ſubjunctive, when they are uſed interrogatively, negatively, or conditionally. Example:

Il eſt certain que vous avez *tort*, indicative; *mais il n'eſt pas certain que* j'aie *raiſon*, ſubjunctive.
It is certain that you are in the wrong, but it is not certain I am in the right.
Il eſt probable qu'on ſera *la paix cette année*, indicative. *Eſt-il probable qu'on* faſſe *la paix cette année?* ſubjunct.
It is probable they will make peace this year. Is it probable they will make peace this year?

Note 1. The impersonal verbs preceded by *on* govern also the next verb in the indicative, when the sentence is affirmative; and in the subjunctive when it is negative, interrogative, or conditional. Example:
On croit que notre flotte à *été battue*. indicative. *Croit-on que notre flotte* ait *été battue?* ſubjunctive.
It is believed that our fleet has been beaten. Is it believed that our fleet has been beaten?

Note 2. The impersonal *ſembler* governs the next verb in the indicative, when it is followed by a noun or a pronoun in the dative caſe, and uſually in the ſubjunctive, when it is not; thus we ſay,
Il ſemble à un aveugle que tout eſt *ténébreux*; indic.
It ſeems to a blind man that every thing is dark.
Il ſemble que vous ne ſachiez *rien, & que vous* n'ayez *vu perſonne*; ſubj.
It ſeems that you know nothing, and you have ſeen nobody.

RULE 161. - - - *Conjunctions which govern the Indicative and Subjunctive.*

The following conjunctions, *de manière que, de ſorte que, tellement que*, ſo that, *ſinon que*, except that, govern the indicative, when the ſentence affirms poſitively that the thing in queſtion is or will be, and the ſubjunctive when the thing is not certain, but rather wiſhed for; thus we ſay,

ind. { *Votre fils ſe comporte de manière qu'il* eſt, *& ſera toujours aimé de ſes maîtres*;
Your ſon behaves in ſuch a manner, that he *is*, and will always *be*, loved by his maſters.

sub. { *Comportez-vous de manière que vous* ſoyez *aimé & eſtimé de vos maîtres & de vos maîtreſſes*;
Behave in ſuch a manner, that you may be loved and eſteemed by your maſters and miſtreſſes.

Note. The word *que* uſed in the ſecond part of a ſentence, to avoid the repetition of a conjunction which is in the firſt, governs the ſame mood as the conjunction it ſtands for. Ex.

ind. { *Auſſitôt que mon frère* m'écrira, *& que* j'aurai *des occaſions, je vous donnerai de ſes nouvelles*; indic.
As ſoon as my brother writes to me, and I have the opportunity, I will let you know.

ſub. { *A moins que vous ne* veniez, *ou que vous ne* m'écriviez, *je ne le ferai pas*; ſubj.
Unleſs you come or write to me, I will not do it.

The word *que*, uſed to avoid the repetition of *ſi*, governs the ſubjunctive. Example:

S'il vient quelqu'un, & que je ne ſois *pas à la maiſon, envoyez-moi chercher*;
If ſomebody comes, and I am not at home, ſend for me.

SECTION THE THIRD.

Which Tenſe of the Subjunctive muſt be uſed.

RULE 162. - - - *Which Tenſe of the Subjunctive Mood muſt be uſed.*

A verb required to be in the ſubjunctive mood by any of the preceding rules, is uſually put in the preſent, when the firſt verb is in the preſent or future of the indicative; and in the preterite, when the firſt verb is in any other tenſe. Exam.

Je crains qu'il ne vienne; preſent.
I fear leſt he ſhould come.
Je craignois que vous ne vinſiez; preterite.
I feared leſt you would come.
Il faudra que je le faſſe; I ſhall be obliged to do it.
Il faudroit que je le fiſſe; I ſhould be obliged to do it.

RULE 163. - - - *Preterite of the Subjunctive.*

Though the firſt verb be in the preſent or future, the ſecond is put in the preterite ſubjunctive, when it is followed by a third verb in the imperfect, or by a conditional expreſſion which has reference to a paſt time. Example:

Croyez-vous qu'ils me refuſaſſent, *ſi je les en priois?*
Do you think they would refuſe me, if I did beg it of them?

Je ne crois pas que vos frères fuſſent *venus ſans moi;*
I do not think your brothers would have come without me.

Sans moi is a conditional expreſſion relative to paſt time, and ſignifies, if I had not perſuaded them to come.

RULE 164. - - - *Compound Tenſes of the Subjunctive.*

A verb required to be in the ſubjunctive mood, is uſually put in the compound of the preſent in French, when it is in Engliſh in the compound of the preſent or of the future; but it is put in the compound of the preterite in French, when it is in any other compound tenſe in Engliſh. Thus we ſay,

*Je crains que vous n'*ayez *fait des plaintes de moi;*
I fear you have complained of me.

*Je craignois que vous n'*euſſiez *fait des plaintes de moi;*
I feared you would have complained of me.

Je ne crois pas qu'il ait *appris la géographie*; pref. *je ne croyois pas qu'il* eût *appris la géographie*: pret.
I do not believe he has learnt geography; I did not believe he had learnt geography.

CHAPTER XVII.

OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

Would, could, ſhould, and *might.*

The words *would, could, ſhould,* and *might,* which we have hitherto conſidered only as the diſtinctive marks of tenſes,

and with which we have conjugated all our verbs regular and irregular, are alſo ſometimes verbs themſelves, and expreſſed in French by *vouloir*, *pouvoir*, or *devoir*, as you may ſee in the following rules:

RULE 165.

1. How to expreſs *will* and *would*.

When the words *will* and *would* are not joined to any verb, they are verbs themſelves, and muſt be expreſſed by the ſame tenſe of *vouloir*, as ſhould the verb *to be willing*, if it was uſed; thus we ſay,

Pourquoi ne faites-vous pas votre thême? Parce que je ne veux *pas.*
Why do you not do your exerciſe? Becauſe I *will* not, or I am not willing.
Si je ne ſuis pas marié, c'eſt que je n'ai pas voulu.
If I am not married, it is becauſe I *would* not, or have not been willing.

The words *will* and *would*, though followed by another verb, are alſo expreſſed by the verb *vouloir*, when they imply a command or an order. Example:

Je veux *qu'on m'obéiſſe*; I will be obeyed.
Il vouloit *que vous lui demandaſſiez pardon*;
He would have you beg his pardon.

2. *Should*.

The word *ſhould* is a verb, and muſt be expreſſed in French by ſome tenſe of the verb *devoir*, when it denotes *neceſſity* or *duty*. Example:

Puiſque la religion le défend, vous ne devez *pas le faire*;
You *ſhould* not do that, ſince religion forbids it.
S'il a beſoin d'argent, il devroit *m'en demander*;
If he wants money, he *ſhould* aſk me for ſome.

3. *Could*, or *might*.

The words *could* and *might* are verbs, when they denote *poſſibility*; they are both expreſſed in French by the ſame tenſe

of the verb *pouvoir*, as ſhould be the verb *to be able*, if it was uſed. Example:

Si je pouvois *vous rendre ce ſervice, je ne vous refuſerois pas*;
If I *could* do you that ſervice, I would not refuſe you.
Vous auriez pu *faire votre thême, ſi vous aviez* voulu;
You *could* have done your exerciſe, if you had been willing.

The words *may* and *can* are uſually verbs, and expreſſed in French by the preſent tenſe of the verb *pouvoir*. Example:

Vous pouvez *écrire votre lettre avant dîner*;
You *can* write your letter before dinner.

N. B. It is ſometimes indifferent to expreſs the words *would, could*, or *might*, as a verb, or as the mark of the conditional; thus we ſay, *je* pourois *vous payer, ſi je voulois*, or, *je vous* payerois *ſi je voulois*; I could pay you, if I would: but this being ſeldom the caſe, the explanation which I have given was neceſſary, and muſt be particularly attended to.

RULE 166. - - - *In which tenſe* would *and* could *are to be put in French.*

When the irregular *would, could, ſhould*, or *might*, are not followed by any verb, or are by one only, they can be expreſſed by the *imperfect*, the *conditional*, the *preterite* of the indicative, or of the ſubjunctive, according as the ſenſe requires it; thus, *I would* can be rendered by *je voulois, je voulus, je voudrois*, or *je vouluſſe*; I ſhould by *je devois, je dus, je devrois*, or *je duſſe*; and I could by *je pouvois, je pus, je pourois*, or *je puſſe*. Example:

Je pouvois *faire cela hier*; I could do that yeſterday.
Je pus *le faire autrefois*; I could do it formerly.
Je le pourois *ſi je voulois*; I could do it if I would.
Je ne crois pas que je le puſſe; I do not think I could do it.

RULE 167. - - - would *and* could, *followed by two verbs.*

When the irregular *would, could, ſhould*, or *might*, are followed by two verbs, of which the laſt is in the participle, they can be rendered in French.

1. By the imperfect, or the conditional of *avoir*, and the participle *voulu*, *pu* or *dû*. Example;

Vous auriez du *m'écrire, puiſque vous ſaviez mon adreſſe*;
You *ſhould have* written to me, ſince you knew my direction.

2. By the conditional of *vouloir*, *pouvoir*, or *devoir*, and the verb *avoir* in the infinitive mood. Example:

Je voudrois *avoir fait mon thême*;
I would I had done my exerciſe.
Vous pouriez avoir *été trompé*;
You might have been deceived.

Theſe ſentences, *I will have him pay me*, *He would have me betray my duty*, and others of the ſame ſort, are rendered in French by *Je veux qu'il me paye*, *Il voudroit que je trabiſſe mon devoir*; as if it were, I will that he pay me, He would that I betray my duty.

Note, If you are at a loſs in which tenſe to put the irregular *would*, *could*, *ſhould* or *might*; change *would* into the verb *to be willing*, *ſhould* into *to be obliged*, *could* into *to be able*, and then put the verbs *pouvoir*, *vouloir*, and *devoir*, into the ſame tenſe in French, as the verb *to be* is in Engliſh, and you will never be miſtaken.

CHAPTER XVIII.

Of the Imperſonal Verbs.

We have already treated of the imperſonal verbs, in rule 160. They are uſed in the third perſon only, and are generally conſtrued in French as in Engliſh, except the following, *il faut*, *il y a*, *il eſt* and *c'eſt*, which require particular attention.

RULE 168. - - - *Uſe of the Imperſonal verb* il faut, *it muſt.*

The imperſonal *it muſt* is always expreſſed by *il faut* for the preſent, and by *il faudra* for the future. The noun or pronoun, which in Engliſh is the nominative of the imperſonal *muſt*, becomes in French the nominative of the next verb, which is put in the ſubjunctive. Example:

Il faut que je le voie; I muſt ſee him.
Il faut que vous veniez demain; You muſt come to-morrow.
Il faudra que votre frère lui écrive;
Your brother muſt write to him.

The verb *have*, which comes often after the imperſonal *it muſt*, is ſometimes put in the ſubjunctive; as, *Il faut que* j'aie *des livres*, I muſt *have* books; *Il faut que votre frère* ait *un chapeau*, Your brother muſt *have* a hat; but it is more elegantly ſuppreſſed, and then the nominative of *muſt* is put in the dative caſe, thus: *Il* me *faut des livres*, *Il faut un chapeau à* votre frère.

The verb *ſhould*, coming at the end of a ſentence, is alſo uſually expreſſed by *il faut*. Example: *Votre thême n'eſt pas fait comme* il faut; Your exerciſe is not done as it *ſhould be*.

RULE 169. - - - *Uſe of the Imperſonal* il y a, *there is.*

The verb *to be*, preceded by the adverb *there*, becomes imperſonal, and is expreſſed by the third perſon of the verb *avoir* for every tenſe, thus: *Il y a*, there is, *or* there are; *il y avoit*, there was, *or* there were; *il y eut*, there were; *il y aura*, there ſhall be; *il y auroit*, there ſhould be; *il y ait*, there may be; and *il y eût*, there might be. Example:

Il y a *beaucoup de difficultés dans votre affaire*;
There are many difficulties in your affair.
Il n'y a *point de talent plus brillant que celui de la parole*;
There is no talent more ſhining than that of ſpeaking.

The verb *to be*, preceded by the word *ſome* or *many*, is alſo often expreſſed by the imperſonal *il y a*, *il y avoit*, &c. as if it was *there are ſome*. Example:

Il y a *des chrétiens qui ſont indignes de ce nom*;
Some chriſtians are unworthy of that name.
Il y a *bien de faux amis*; *Many* friends *are* falſe.

The impersonal *il y a, il y avoit,* &c. is also used in French in three circumstances, where *there is* is not used in English.

1. To ask the distance from one place to another, then it answers to the English word *how far*. Example:
Combien y a-t-il *de Winchester à Londres?*
How far is it to Winchester from London?

2. To ask the number of such or such thing, then it answers to the word *how many*. Example:
Combien y a-t-il *d'habitans en France?*
How many inhabitants *are there* in France?
Combien y a-t-il *de Rois en Europe?*
How many Kings *are there* in Europe?

3. To ask *how long* it is since such or such thing happened. Example:
Combien y a-t-il *que Mr. votre père est mort?*
How long has your father been dead?

When the question is made, by *il y a, il y avoit,* &c. we generally answer by the same verb. Example:
Combien y a-t-il *de Douvres à Calais?* Il y a *dix lieux.*
Combien y a-t-il *d'âmes en Angleterre?*
Il y en a *onze millions.*
Combien y a-t-il *que la guerre dure?* Il y a *quatre ans.*

N. B. The impersonal *il y a* must be used in French every time the sentence is or could be Englished by *there is*. It is also frequently used after the words, *how long, how far, how many,* as in the preceding examples.

RULE 170. - - - *Distinction between* il est, *and* c'est*, *it is.*

The impersonal *it is, it was, it will be, &c.* is expressed in French by *il est, il étoit, il sera, &c.* when it is followed

* C'est *is sometimes used before an adjective in sentences like these,* c'est bon, c'est mauvais, &c. *but then* c'est bon *signifies* cela est bon; *and* c'est mauvais, *signifies* cela est mauvais, *or* c'est une chose mauvaise.

by an adjective without a ſubſtantive, or by a ſubſtantive of time. Example:

Il eſt *ſix heures*; il eſt *temps de partir.*
It is ſix o'clock; *it is* time to ſet out.
Il eſt *difficile de plaire à tout le monde*;
It is difficult to pleaſe every body.

It is expreſſed by *c'eſt, c'étoit, ce fut, &c.* when it is followed by a ſubſtantive which has not reference to time, by a pronoun, or a verb in the infinitive mood. Example:

Ce *n*'eſt *pas l'argent qui nous rend heureux*, c'eſt *la vertu*;
It is not fortune which renders us happy, it is virtue.
C'eſt *à vous à jouer*; it is your turn to play.
C'eſt *autoriſer le vice que de ne pas punir les méchans*;
Not to puniſh the wicked is authoriſing vice.

RULE 171. - - - it is, *expreſſed by* c'eſt *and* ce ſont.

The impersonal *it is, it was, &c.* followed by a ſubſtantive, or the pronoun *eux* or *elles*, in the nominative plural, is expreſſed by *ce ſont*, and not by *c'eſt*. Example:

Ce ſont *eux qui l'ont vu*; it is they who have ſeen him.
Ce ſont *vos frères qui ont raiſon*;
It is your brothers who are in the right.
Not *c'eſt vos frères qui ont raiſon*, nor *c'eſt eux qui l'ont vu.*

The impersonal *it is, it was, &c.* is always expreſſed by *c'eſt* or *c'étoit* in the ſingular before the pronouns *me, te, nous, vous*, and alſo before the pronouns *eux, elles*, or a ſubſtantive plural, when they are not in the nominative caſe. Example:

C'eſt *vous qui avez tort*; it is you who are in the wrong.
C'eſt *à eux à répondre*; it is their turn to anſwer.
C'eſt *de vos frères que je me plains*; it is of your brothers I complain.

CHAPTER XIX.

Of Adverbs.

RULE 172. - - - *Where the Adverbs are to be placed.*

Adverbs are uſually placed after the verb in a ſimple tenſe, and between the auxiliary and the participle in a compound one. Example:

Je ne parle jamais *mal de perſonne*;
I never ſpeak ill of any body.
Je n'ai jamais *mal parlé de perſonne*;
I never have ſpoken ill of any body.

RULE 173. - - - *Adverbs after the Participle.*

The adverbs which govern a noun are always placed in French after the participle in a compound tenſe. Example:
Votre frère a agi conſéquemment *à ſes principes*;
Your brother has acted conformably to his principles.
J'ai eu beaucoup *de peine à le perſuader*;
I have had much difficulty in perſuading him.

Adverbs of time, and thoſe compoſed of two or three words, are uſually placed after the participle in a compound tenſe. Example:
Il a fait beau tems aujourd'hui;
It has been good weather to-day.
J'ai rencontré votre frère par haſard *en allant à Londres*;
As I was going to London, I met with your brother by chance.
Not *il a aujourd'hui fait beau tems*, nor *j'ai par hazard rencontré votre frère*.

Note 1. Many adverbs uſually begin a ſentence in French or a member of it, ſuch are, *cependant*, mean while; *c'eſt pourquoi*, therefore; *comment*, how; *combien*, how much; *quand*, when; *où*, where, &c. Example:
Quand *irez-vous en France?* When will you go to France?

Note 2. The adverb *preſque*, almoſt, goes before *toujours* and *ſouvent*; and theſe two go before all others, when ſeveral meet together. Example:
Le roi eſt preſque toujours *malade*;
The king is ſcarcely ever well.
Votre frère & le mien ſont toujours enſemble:
Your brother and mine are always together.

CHAPTER XX.

Syntax of Prepoſitions.

RULE 174. - - - *Prepoſitions are placed before the Word which they govern.*

Prepoſitions are placed in French before the word they govern, in Engliſh they are ſometimes placed after. Example:

A *qui parlez-vous?* Whom do you ſpeak *to?*
De *quoi vous plaignez-vous?* What do yo complain *of?*
Pour *quoi cela?* What is that for?

When the prepoſitions *de, à, pour, après* and *ſans,* govern an infinitive mood, they may be ſeparated from it by the negation, and the pronouns governed by the verb, if there is any. Example:

Je ſuis fâché de *ne vous l'avoir pas dit plutôt;*
I am ſorry I did not tell it you before.
Il a vendu ſa maiſon ſans *nous en avertir;*
He has ſold his houſe without telling it us.

RULE 175. - - - *from, to,* expreſſed by *de à,* or by *de en.*

The prepoſitions *from* and *to,* uſed to expreſs the diſtance, or the going from ſuch a town to another ſpecified, are rendered, *from* by *de,* and *to* by *à.* Example:

Je vais en un jour de *Paris* à *l'Aigle;*
I go in one day *from* Paris *to* l'Aigle.

They are rendered, *from* by *de,* and *to* by *en,* in all other circumſtances, when they are uſed to expreſs a diſtance or a going from one place to another. Example:

Je vais de *rue* en *rue,* de *ville* en *ville,* de *province* en *province;*
I go *from* ſtreet *to* ſtreet, *from* town *to* town, *from* province *to* province.

When the prepoſition *to,* ſignifies *ſo far as,* it is generally expreſſed by *juſqu'à.* Example:

J'ai bu le calice juſqu'à *la lie*;
I have drunk the cup *to* the dregs.
Je le pourſuivrai juſqu'à *la fin*;
I will proſecute him *to* the end.

RULE 176. - - - *Prepoſitions expreſſed ſeveral Ways.*

An Engliſh prepoſition has often ſeveral ſignifications, and conſequently muſt be expreſſed divers ways in French. Let us take, for inſtance, the prepoſition *about*. Example:
Je ſuis venu pour vous parler touchant *notre affaire*;
I am come to ſpeak to you *about* our affair.
J'irai vous voir vers *la fin du mois prochain*;
I will go and ſee you *about* the end of the next month.
Il arriva ſur *la fin du dîner*.
Dinner was *about* over when he came.

RULE 177. - - - *When the Prepoſitions are to be repeated.*

The prepoſitions *de* and *à* are uſually repeated before every noun, pronoun or verb; others, ſuch as *avec*, *contre*, *ſans*, &c. are repeated before nouns or verbs of different ſignification, whether they are or are not repeated in Engliſh. Example:
Le fils de Dieu eſt venu ſur la terre pour *racheter les hommes* & pour *détruire l'empire du demon*;
The ſon of God is come on earth *to* redeem men, and *to* deſtroy the empire of the devil.

They are not uſually repeated before words which have pretty near the ſame ſignification. Example:
Le fils de Dieu eſt venu ſur la terre, pour *racheter les hommes*, & *les délivrer du péché* (not *et pour les délivrer*, becauſe *racheter* and *délivrer* ſignify the ſame thing);
The ſon of God is come on earth to redeem men and to free them from ſin.
Notre loi ne juge perſonne, ſans *l'avoir entendu & examiné*;
Our law judges nobody, without having heard and examined him.

However, the prepoſition muſt be repeated before two verbs even of the ſame ſignification, when they govern different nouns or pronouns. Example:

Notre loi ne juge perſonne, ſans *l'avoir entendu et* ſans *avoir examiné ſa conduite.*
Our law judges nobody, *without* having heard him and examined his conduct.

Of Conjunctions and Interjections.

We have ſpoken at large of conjunctions, page 114 and following; their uſe and conſtruction have been fully explained in the Syntax in rules 97, 158, and 161; what I could add here on the ſubject would be a tedious repetition of what is before explained under different heads, as occaſion required it.

The different ſpecies of interjections have been treated of in page 116; their conſtruction is the ſame in French as in Engliſh, therefore they require no explanation.

CHAPTER XXI.

OF THE FRENCH IDIOMS.

Idioms are a mode of ſpeaking peculiar to a language, and which cannot be literally tranſlated into another.

The chapter of idioms is divided into *three* ſections: the firſt explains the idiomatical expreſſions of the auxiliary verbs *to have* and *to be*; the ſecond ſhews the idiomatical ſignifications in which the verbs *aller, avoir, venir, donner, faire, jouer,* and *mourir,* may be taken; the third contains a ſeries of the moſt remarkable French idioms.

SECTION THE FIRST.

Idiomatical Expreſſions of the Verbs to have *and* to be.

RULE 178. - - - *Caſes in which the Verbs* to be *is expreſſed by the Verb* avoir.

The verb *to be* is expreſſed in French by the ſame tenſe of the verb *avoir*, in the ſeven following caſes:

1. When it is followed by a word of number, ſuch as *one, two, three, four*, &c. Example:

Notre maiſon a *vingt pieds de large*; not *eſt*.
Our houſe *is* twenty feet broad.
J'ai vingt cinq ans; I *am* twenty-five years of age.

2. When it is uſed to aſk the age of a perſon or an animal. Example:

Quel age avez-*vous?* How old *are* you? not *êtes-vous*.
Quel age a *votre chien?* How old *is* your dog?

3. When it is followed by the words *hungry, dry*, or *thirſty*. Example:

Avez-*vous faim, ma fille? Oui, ma mère, j'ai grand faim*.
Are you hungry, daughter? Yes, mother, I *am* very hungry.
Avez-*vous ſoif? Non, je n'ai pas ſoif à preſent*;
Are you dry? No, I *am* not dry at preſent.

4. When it is followed by the words *hot, warm*, or *cold*. The part of the body which is *cold* or *hot*, is preceded in French by *au* for the maſculine, by *à la* for the feminine, and by *aux* for the plural, inſtead of the poſſeſſive pronouns *my, thy, his, her, our, your*, or *their*, uſed in Engliſh. Exam.

J'ai froid aux pieds; my feet *are* cold.
Avez-*vous chaud aux mains? Are* your hands warm?
Chauffez-vous ſi vous avez *froid*;
Warm yourſelf if you *are* cold.

5. When it is or could be followed by the adverb *there*, without altering the ſenſe of the ſentence. Example:

Il y a *beaucoup de pauvres en Angleterre et en France*;
There are many poor in England and in France.

6. When it is followed by the words *in the wrong, in the right,* or *afraid.* Example:

Vous aviez *raiſon, et moi* j'avois *tort*;
You were in the right, and I was in the right.
Pourquoi avez-*vous peur?* Why are you afraid?

7. When *to be* is followed by *in vain,* it is commonly expreſſed by *avoir beau.* Example:

Vous avez beau *l'attendre, il ne viendra pas*;
It *is in vain* to wait for him, he will not come.
*J'*avois beau *l'avertir, il ne vouloit pas me croire*;
It *was in vain* for me to adviſe him, he would not believe me.

RULE 179. - - - to be, *expreſſed by* faire.

The verb *to be* is expreſſed by *faire,* ſpeaking of the kind or diſpoſition of the weather; and with the words *jour, nuit, ſoleil, vent,* &c. Example:

Il fait *beau temps aujourd'hui*;	it *is* fine weather to-day;
Il feſoit *mauvais temps hier*;	it *was* bad weather yeſterday.
Il fera *froid en peu*;	it *will be* cold ſoon.
Fait-*il chaud en France?*	*is* it hot in France?

If the word *weather* is the nominative caſe of the verb *to be,* then it ſhould be expreſſed by *être,* and not by *faire.* Example: *le temps* eſt *beau,* the weather *is* fine; *l'air* eſt *froid,* the air *is* cold: not *le temps fait beau, l'air fait froid.*

RULE 180. - - - *The Verb* to be, *expreſſed by the Verb* ſe porter.

The verbs *to be* and *to do,* uſed in Engliſh to inquire or to ſpeak of the health of ſomebody, are both expreſſed in French by the reflected verb *ſe porter.* Example:

Comment vous portez-*vous?*	how do you *do?*
Je me porte *fort bien*;	I *am* very well.
Mr. votre père ſe porte-t-*il bien?*	*is* your father well?
Il ſe portoit *bien hier.*	he *was* well yeſterday.

RULE 181. - - - *Il en eſt de,* it is with.

The imperſonal *it is, it was, it will be,* &c. followed by the prepoſition *with,* is expreſſed by *il en eſt de* for the preſent,

il en étoit de for the imperfect, *il en fut de* for the preterite, *il en ſera de* for the future, *il en ſeroit de* for the conditional, *il en ſoit de* for the preſ. ſubj. *il en fût de* for the preterite. Example:

Il en eſt de *vous comme des autres hommes*;
It is with you as with other men.
Je ne crois pas qu'il en ſoit de *mon fils comme du vôtre*;
I do not believe *it will be* with my ſon as with yours.

N. B. The verb *to be* before an infinitive is ſometimes expreſſed by the verb *devoir*; ſometimes it is not expreſſed at all, and then the next verb is put in the future. Example:

Je dois diner, (ou *je* dinerai) *en ville aujourd'hui*;
I *am* to dine out to-day.

RULE 182. - - - *The Verb* to have, *expreſſed by the Verb* être.

The verb *to have* is expreſſed by *être*, 1, in the compound tenſes of all the reflected verbs. Example:

Je me ſuis *levé ce matin à ſix heures*;
I *have* riſen this morning at ſix o'clock.
Vous êtes-*vous apperçu du tour?*
Have you perceived the trick?

2. In the compound tenſes of the verbs *aller, arriver, déchoir, décéder, entrer, mourir, naître, partir, tomber*, alſo of *venir* and its compounds, *devenir, diſconvenir, intervenir, parvenir, revenir*, and *ſurvenir*. Example:

Vous êtes *allé à Londres ſans ma permiſſion*;
You *have* gone to London without my leave.
Mon frère eſt *mort ce matin à ſept heures*;
My brother *has* died this morning at ſeven.

RULE 183. - - - avoir mal à, *ſpeaking of any illneſs.*

We make uſe of *avoir mal à*, to aſk or to expreſs what part of the body is affected with ſome illneſs or pain. Example:

Avez-vous mal à la tête?	have you the head-ach?
J'ai mal aux yeux;	my eyes are ſore.
Avez-vous mal aux dents?	have you the tooth-ach?

J'ai mal au côté;	I feel a pain in my ſide.
Il a mal aux pieds;	his feet are ſore.

SECTION THE SECOND.

Idiomatical Significations of aller.

The verb *aller*, beſides its natural ſignification of *to go*, has many others, as may be ſeen in the following Example:

Le commerce ne va *plus,*	Trade is dead.
Eſt-ce ainſi que vous y allez?	Is this your way of proceeding?
Comment va *la ſanté?*	How do you do?
Tout va *bien, tout* va *mal,*	All is well, all is bad.
Cet habit vous va *bien,*	That coat ſuits you well.
Mon frère va *partir,*	My brother is going out.
Aller *aux voix,*	To put to the vote.
Il va *pleuvoir, neiger,*	It will rain, ſnow.
Il y va *de la vie,*	Life is at ſtake.
Cela va *ſans dire,*	That is underſtood.
Aller *pied à pied, pas à pas,*	To act deliberately.
Il y va *de mon honneur,*	My honour is concerned in it.
*Vous ne faites qu'*aller *et venir,*	You are ever running up and down.
Il va *venir,*	He is coming.
Allez-*vous ſortir?*	Are you going out?

Idiomatical Significations of avoir*.

Avoir *beſoin de quelque choſe,*	To want ſomething.
Avoir *bonne mine,*	To look well.
Avoir *mauvaiſe mine,*	To look ill.
Avoir *affaire de quelque choſe,*	To have occaſion for ſomething.
Avoir *le cœur ſur les levres,*	To be free and open.
Avoir *des affaires par deſſus les yeux.*	To be full of buſineſs.

* *The verbs uſed in the infinitive preſent, in ſome idiomatical ſignifications, may be uſed in all other tenſes and perſons in the ſame ſenſe.*

Idiomatical Significations of donner.

The verb *donner*, beſides its ſignification of *to give*, is uſed in many other ſenſes, as appears by the following Examples:

Se donner *des airs*;	To take a great deal upon one's ſelf.
Donner *dans le piége*;	To be caught in the ſnare.
En donner *à garder à quelqu'un*;	To make a fool of ſome body.
Se donner du bon tems;	To paſs one's time merrily.
Se donner *de garde de faire telle choſe*;	To be ſure not to do ſuch a thing.
Donner *ſur l'ennemi*;	To fall upon the enemy.
Ce vin donne *à la tête*;	That wine flies up to the head.
Ne ſavoir où donner *de la tête*;	To know not what way to turn.
Donner *carte blanche*;	To give full liberties.

Idiomatical Significations of faire.

Faire *grace à quelqu'un*;	To forgive ſomebody.
Faire *le malade*;	To ſham ſickneſs.
Faire *fond ſur quelqu'un*;	To rely upon ſomebody.
Faire *faire un montre*;	To beſpeak a watch.
Faire *voile*, or *mettre à la voile*;	To ſet ſail.
Se faire *des amis*.	To get friends.
Se faire *des affaires*;	To bring one's ſelf into trouble.
Se faire *à la fatigue*;	To inure one's ſelf to hardſhips.
Faire *bien ſes affaires*;	To proſper.
Faire *des contes à dormir debout*;	To tell idle ſtories.
Faire *un pas de clerc*;	To take a falſe ſtep.
Faire *des armes*;	To fence.
Faire *la ſourde oreille*;	To have no ears.
Faire *bonne mine à quelqu'un*;	To receive one kindly.
Faire *l'homme d'importance*;	To pretend to great matters.

Several Significations of jouer.

Jouer *des inſtrumens*;	To play upon inſtruments.
Jouer *à qulque jeu*;	To play at ſome game.
Jouer *une piéce de théatre*;	To act a play.
Jouer *un tour à quelqu'n*;	To ſerve one a trick.
Jouer *quite ou double*;	To run all chance.
Jouer *de ſon reſte*;	To uſe one's laſt ſhifts.
Jouer *au plus fin*;	To vie in cunning.

Idiomatical Significations of mourir.

Mourir *de faim*;	To be ſtarved.
Mourir *de ſoif*;	To be choaked with thirſt.
Mourir *de froid*;	To ſtarve with cold.
Mourir *de chaud*;	To be extremely hot.
Mourir *de peur*;	To be frightened to death.
Mourir *de chagrin*;	To grieve one's ſelf to death.
Mourir *de douleur*;	To have one's heart broken.

Idiomatical Significations of the Word main.

Donner la main à un malheureux;	*To relieve an unfortunate.*
Donner un coup de main;	*To help.*
Donner à plaines mains;	*To give largely.*
Donner de main en main;	*To handle about.*
Faire main baſſe ſur l'ennemi;	*To put the enemy to the ſword.*
Faire un coup de main;	*To do a bold action.*
Faire quelque choſe ſous main;	*To do ſomething ſecretly.*
Mettre l'épée à la main;	*To draw the ſword.*
Prendre à toutes mains;	*To catch every way.*
En venir aux mains;	*To fight.*

SECTION THE THIRD.

A Series of the moſt curious French Idioms.

Aller à bride abbatue,	*To go full ſpeed.*
Avoir la mort entre les dents,	*To have already one foot in the grave.*
Avoir la tête près du bonnet,	*To take fire preſently.*
Boire le calice juſqu'à la lie,	*To drink the cup to the dregs.*
C'eſt la mer à boire,	*It is an endleſs buſineſs.*
Chercher à pied & à cheval,	*To look every where.*
Couper la parole à quelqu'un,	*To interrupt one who ſpeaks.*

Découvrir le pot aux roſes,	*To find out the myſtery.*
Dormir la graſſe matinée,	*To ſleep very late.*
Elever quelqu'un juſqu' aux nues,	*To praiſe one to exceſs.*
Etre à deux doigts de ſa perte,	*To be on the brink of ruin.*
Etre tendre à la mouche,	*To be very captious.*
Jetter de la poudre aux yeux,	*To caſt a miſt before one's eyes.*
Jetter feu & flâme,	*To fret and fume.*
Manger ſon bled en herbes,	*To ſpend one's revenue before it comes in.*
Mettre de l'au dans ſon vin,	*To allay one's paſſion.*
Mettre les fers au feu,	*To fall ſtoutly to work.*
Mettre une armée ſur pied,	*To raiſe an army.*
Ne demander que plaie & boſſes.	*To love ſtrife and contention.*
Ne ſavoir ſur quel pied danſer.	*Not to know what way to turn.*
Opiner du bonnet,	*To vote bluntly.*
Partager le gateau,	*To ſhare the profit.*
Paſſer quelqu'un au fil de l'épée,	*To put ſomebody to the ſword.*
Prendre l'air du bureau,	*To feel people's pulſe.*
Prendre quelqu'un au pied levé,	*To ſnap one up.*
Remuer ciel & terre,	*To leave nothing undiſturbed.*
Riſquer le tout pour le tout,	*To lay all at ſtake.*
River le clou à quelqu'un,	*To give one as good as he brings.*
Rompre la paille avec quelqu'un,	*To fall out with one.*
Tirer au court fêtu,	*To draw lots.*
Tirer ſon épingle du jeu,	*To ſlip one's neck out of the collar.*
Trouver chauſſure à ſon pied,	*To be well fitted.*
Trouver ſon maitre,	*To meet with one's match.*
Venir à bout de ſes deſſeins.	*To ſucceed in one's deſigns.*

CHAPTER XXII.

A Series of the Proverbs moſt uſed in French.

Abondance de bien ne nuit pas,	*A ſtore is no ſore.*
A force de forger, on devient forgeron,	*Aſſiduity makes all things eaſy.*
A l'impoſſible nul n'eſt tenu,	*There is no fence againſt the flail.*
A méchant chien court lien,	*A curſt cur muſt be tied ſhort.*
Ami au prêt, ennemi au rendre,	*I loſe my money and my friend.*
Apprenti n'eſt pas maître,	*You muſt ſpoil before you ſpin.*
Après la mort le medecin,	*After death comes the phyſician.*
A qui veut mal, mal arrive,	*Evil to him that evil thinks.*
Argent comptant porte medecine,	*Ready money is a remedy.*
Aux grands maux les grands remedes,	*A deſperate diſeaſe muſt have a deſperate cure.*
Beau parler n'écorche pas la langue,	*Fair words coſt nothing.*
Beaucoup de bruit, & peu d'effet,	*Great cry, and little wool.*
Bon avocat, mauvais voiſin,	*A good lawyer and evil neighbour.*
Bonne renommée vaut mieux que ceinture dorée,	*A good name is better than riches.*
Ce n'eſt pas pour vous que le four chauffe,	*That is nothing for you.*
Ce n'eſt pas l'habit qui fait le le moine,	*It is not the cowl that makes the friar.*
Celui qui cherche le danger y périra,	*Harm watch, harm catch.*
Ce qui abonde de vicie pas,	*Plenty makes dainties.*
Ce qui eſt differé n'eſt pas perdu,	*All is not loſt that is delayed.*
C'eſt de la moutarde après diné,	*After meat comes muſtard.*

C'eſt là où gîte le lievre, *There lies the ſecret.*
Charité bien ordonnée commence par ſoi-même, *Charity begins at home.*
Chien qui aboie ne mord pas, *Barking dogs ſeldom bite.*
Dans les petits pots ſont les bonnes épices, *Short and ſweet.*
De tout s'aviſe à qui pain faut, *Neceſſity is the mother of invention.*
De deux maux il faut choiſir le moindre, *Of two evils chooſe the leaſt.*

Faire d'une pierre deux coups, *To kill two birds with one ſtone.*
Familiarité engendre mépris, *Too much familiarity breeds contempt.*
Faute de parler, on meurt ſans confeſſion, *Spare to ſpeak and ſpare to ſpeed*
Faute d'un point Martin perdit ſon âne. *A miſs is as good as a mile.*
Fin contre fin n'eſt pas bon à faire doublure. *Diamonds cut diamonds.*

Grands vanteurs, petits faiſeurs, *Great boaſt, little roaſt.*
Il a les yeux plus grands que le ventre. *His eyes are bigger than his belly.*
Il a plus de hazard qu'un honnête homme, *He is more lucky than wiſe.*
Il a plus de peur que de mal, *He is more afraid than hurt.*
Il eſt comme l'oiſeau ſur la branche, *He has no fixed abode.*
Il eſt comme le poiſſon dans l'eau, *The dog's head is in the porridge pot.*
Il crie avant qu'on l'écorche, *He halts before he is lame.*
Il en fait ſes choux gras. *He feathers his neſt by it.*
Il ennuie à qui attend. *Waiting is tedious.*
Il fait bon pêcher à l'eau trouble, *It is good fiſhing in troubled waters.*
Il faut battre le fer quand il eſt chaud, *Strike the iron while it is hot.*
Il faut faire vie qui dure, *Old young and old long.*

Il ne faut pas juger des gens, par la mine,
One muſt not hang a man by his looks.

Il n'a ni bouche ni éperon.
He has neither wit nor courage.

Il n'eſt ſauce que d'appetit,
Good ſtomach is the beſt ſauce.

Il n'eſt ſi bon chartier qui ne verſe,
That is a good horſe that never ſtumbles.

Il n'eſt pire eau que celle qui dort,
Smooth water runs deep.

Il n'eſt point de roſes ſans épines.
No roſe without a thorn.

Il n'y a point de feu ſans fumée.
Where is the ſmoke there is the fire.

Il n'y a que la première peine qui coute,
The firſt ſtep over, the reſt is eaſy.

Il ſent bien où le bât le bleſſe.
He feels where the ſhoe pinches.

Il vaut mieux faire envie que pitié.
Better to be envied than pitied.

Il vaut mieux plier que de rompre,
It is better to bend than break.

Il vaut mieux tard que jamais,
Better late than never.

La clef d'or ouvre toutes les ſerrures,
Bribe can get in without knocking.

La faim chaſſe le loup du bois,
Hunger will break through a ſtone wall.

La fin couronne l'œuvre.
All's well that ends well.

La néceſſité eſt la mère de l'induſtrie,
Neceſſity is the mother of invention.

La nuit tous chats ſont gris.
When candles are out, all cats are grey.

La patience eſt un remede à tous maux,
Patience is a plaſter for all ſores.

Le bien mal acquis ne profite jamais,
Ill gotten goods never proſper.

Le jeu n'en vaut pas la chandelle,
The buſineſs will not quit coſt.

Le renard prêche aux poules,
The devil rebukes ſin.

Le ſage entend à demi mot.
A word to the wiſe is enough.

Les beaux eſprits ſe rencontrent,
Wits jump.

Les bons comptes ſont les bons amis,	*Short reckonings make long friends.*
Les honneurs changent les mœurs,	*Honour changes manners.*
Les petits ruiſſeux ſont les grandes rivières,	*Many drops make a ſhower.*
Les plus courtes folies ſont les meilleures,	*The ſhorteſt follies are the beſt.*
L'occaſion fait le larron,	*Opportunity makes the thief.*
L'oiſiveté eſt la mère de tous les vices,	*Idleneſs is the root of all evil.*
Marchand qui perd ne peut rire,	*Let him laugh that wins.*
Mauvaiſe herbe croit toujours aſſez,	*Ill weeds grow apace,*
Marchandiſe qui plait eſt à moitié vendue,	*Good wares make quick markets.*
Néceſſité n'a point de loi,	*Neceſſity has no law.*
Né réveillez pas le chat qui dort,	*When ſorrow is aſleep, awake it not.*
Nouveaux rois, nouvelles lois,	*New lords, new laws.*
On n'a jamais bon marché de mauvaiſe marchandiſe,	*The beſt the cheapeſt.*
On n'a rien ſans peine,	*No pain, no profit.*
On ne fait pas marché du premier mot,	*More words than one go to the bargain.*
On ne ſauroit faire boire un âne s'il n'a ſoif,	*A man may lead his horſe to the water, but he cannot make him drink unleſs he liſts.*
Où il n'y a rien, le Roi perd ſes droits,	*Where nothing is to be had, the King loſes his right.*
Paris n'a pas été fait dans un jour,	*Rome was not built in one day.*
Parmi les aveugles les borgnes ſont Rois,	*Among the blind, one-eyed is a King,*
Pas à pas va bien loin,	*Fair and ſoft goes faſt.*
Point d'argent point de Suiſſe,	*No money no pater-noſter.*
Porter l'eau à la mer,	*To carry coals to Newcaſtle.*
Promettre & tenir ſont deux,	*It is one thing to promiſe, and another to perform.*

Quand on emprunte on ne choiſit pas,	*Beggars muſt not be chooſers.*
Quand on parle du loup, on en voit la queue,	*Talk of the devil, and his horns appear.*
Qui aime Bertrand, aime ſon chien,	*Love me, love my dog.*
Qui fera bien, bien trouvera,	*Do well and have well.*
Qui menace a ſouvent peur,	*Swaggerers are great cowards.*
Qui répond paie,	*The bail muſt pay.*
Qui ne hazarde rien n'a rien,	*Nothing venture, nothing have.*
Qui trop embraſſe, mal étrient,	*Covet all, loſe all.*
Qui ſe fait brebis, le loup le mange,	*Who makes himſelf a ſheep, him the wolf eateth.*
Selon ta bourſe gouverne ta bouche,	*Cut your coat according to your cloth.*
Si vous n'êtes pas content, prenez des cartes,	*If you do not like it, turn your buckles behind.*
Tirer d'un ſac deux moutures,	*To take double fees.*
Toujours pêche qui en prend un,	*Still he fiſhes that catches one.*
Tout ce qui brille n'eſt pas or,	*All is not gold that glitters.*
Toute vérité n'eſt pas bonne à dire,	*Truth is not to be ſpoken at all times.*
Trop de familiarité engendre mépris,	*Too much familiarity breeds contempt.*
Un bon chien chaſſe de race,	*Cat after kind.*
Un chien regarde bien un evêque,	*A cat may look upon a king.*
Un honnête homme n'a que ſa parole,	*A honeſt man is as good as his word.*
Un malheur ne vient jamais ſeul,	*One misfortune comes on the neck of another.*
Une ſouris qui n'a qu'un trou eſt bientôt priſe,	*It is good to have two ſtrings to one's bow.*
Un tiens vaut mieux que deux tu l'auras,	*A bird in the hand is worth two in the buſh.*

CHAPTER XXIII.

OF THE CONCORD, DISPOSITION, AND REPETITION OF WORDS IN A SENTENCE.

SECTION THE FIRST.

What Parts of Speech agree together in French.

1. *Articles.*

The three articles, *definite*, *indefinite*, and *partitive*, agree in gender and number with their ſubſtantive. Example:

Le *père*, la *mère*, *et* les *enfants*, *ſont à la campagne*;
The father, mother, and children, are in the country.
J'ai un *bon jardin*, *et* une *belle maiſon près de Londres*;
I have a good garden and a fine houſe near London.
Donnez moi du *pain*, de la *viande*, *et* des *œufs*;
Give me ſome bread, ſome meat, and ſome eggs.

2. *Adjectives.*

All adjectives agree in gender and number with the ſubſtantives to which they are united or related. Example:

Un homme ſavant, *une femme* ſavante, *des filles* ſavantes;
A learned man, a learned woman, learned girls.

3. *Pronouns.*

All pronouns, 1, *perſonal*, 2, *poſſeſſive*, 3, *demonſtrative*, 4, *relative*, and 5, *interrogative*, agree in gender and number with their ſubſtantive. Example:

1. *Mon frère veut épouſer votre ſœur, cependant je crois qu'*il *ne* la *connoît pas*;
My brother wiſhes to marry your ſiſter, yet I think he does not know her.

2. Son *fils*, ſa *fille*, *et* ſes *ſœurs viendront ici ce ſoir*;
His ſon, daughter, and ſiſters, will come here to-night.

3. Ce *livre eſt neuf*, cette *maiſon eſt vieille*, ces *plumes ſont bonnes*;
This book is new, this houſe is old, theſe pens are good.

4. *Le vice contre* lequel *je parle*; *les raiſons ſur* leſquelles *je me fonde, ſont ſans réplique*;
The vice againſt which I ſpeak; the reaſons I rely upon are without reply.

5. Quel *eſt ſon crime, &* quelle *eſt ſon excuſe?*
What is his crime, and what is his excuſe?

4. *Verbs.*

All perſonal verbs agree in number and perſon with their nominative caſe. Example:

Je parle, nous parlons; I ſpeak, we ſpeak.
L'homme eſt *mortel, les hommes* ſont *mortels*;
Man is mortal, men are mortal.
Il dit *la vérité, ils* diſent *la vérité*;
He ſays the truth, they ſay the truth.

SECTION THE SECOND.

Of Collocation.

The Order in which the Words of a Sentence muſt be placed.

RULE 1. The articles, the poſſeſſive, demonſtrative, and interrogative pronouns, always precede in French, as in Engliſh, the ſubſtantive to which they are joined; as you may obſerve in the examples of the preceding ſections.

RULE 2. The adjectives of number, as, *un, deux, trois, quatre*, &c. and alſo the following, *beau, bon, grand, gros, jeune, mauvais, méchant, meilleur, moindre*, and *petit*, precede their ſubſtantive, but others are uſually placed after; as, *un* bon *homme, un* grand *homme*; a good man, a great man.

RULE 3. The relative pronouns, *qui, que, dont, lequel,*

&c. come immediately after the noun or pronoun to which they have reference. Example: *Ne rejettez pas un avis* dont *vous connoiſſez l'utilité*; do not reject advice, the utility of which you know.

RULE 4. The prepoſitions always come before the word which they govern. Example: *De quoi vous plaignez-vous?* What do you complain of?

RULE 5. The adverb is uſually put after the verb, in a ſimple tenſe; as, *il répond* bien, he anſwers well; and after the auxiliary in a compound one; as, *il a* bien *répondu*, he has well anſwered.

RULE 6. The nominative of a verb precedes it in an affirmative ſentence; as, *mon père eſt venu, il m'a donné de l'argent*; my father is come, he has given me ſome money.

If the ſentence is interrogative, and the nominative of the verb be any of the following pronouns, *je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles, ce,* or *on,* it is placed after the verb when it is a ſimple tenſe, and after the auxiliary when it is a compound one. Example: *Parle-t-il? A-t-il parlé? Dit-on? A-t-on dit?*

If the nominative be a ſubſtantive, or any other pronoun than thoſe before mentioned, it precedes the verb in an interrogative ſentence, but then the perſonal pronouns *il* or *elle, ils* or *elles,* muſt be uſed after the verb or its auxiliary. Example: *Votre père eſt-il venu? Votre mère eſt-elle à la maiſon?* Is your father come? Is your mother at home?

RULE 7. The perſonal pronouns are placed immediately after the verb they are governed by, when it is in the imperative affirmative; as, *donnez-le moi,* give it me; *vendez-le nous,* ſell it us.

When the verb is not in the imperative affirmative, the governed pronouns are put immediately before it in a ſimple tenſe, and immediately before the auxiliaries *avoir* or *être* in a compound one; as, *il vous les donnera,* he will give them to you; *il nous les a vendus,* he has ſold them to us; *il me les a promis,* he has promiſed them to me, &c.

If a verb governs two or more pronouns, they are placed before it in this order: *me, te, ſe, nous, vous,* go before *le, la, les*; *le, la, les,* go before *lui* and *leur*; *lui* and *leur* go before

y and *en*. Example: *il vous les prêtera*, he will lend them to you; *il les lui prêtera*, he will lend them to him; *je vous y en enverrai*, I will ſend you ſome; *je leur y en ai envoyé*, I have ſent them ſome.

RULE 8. If the ſentence is negative, *ne* precedes the verb and the governed pronouns; the other part of negation, ſuch as, *pas*, *jamais*, *rien*, &c. uſually comes after the verb in a ſimple tenſe, and after its auxiliary in a compound one. Example: *je* ne *le croirai* jamais, I will never believe it; *il* ne *les a pas vus*, he has not ſeen them; *il n'y a rien de plus beau*, there is nothing finer.

If the verb be in the infinitive, the two parts of negation go before it, and even before the governed pronouns; the prepoſition, if there is any, precedes the negation and the pronouns. Example: *je le ferai, pour* ne pas *vous déplaire*, I will do it, not to diſpleaſe you.

The other parts of ſpeech not mentioned in theſe eight rules uſually follow the ſame order in French as in Engliſh.

SECTION THE THIRD.

What Words muſt be repeated in a Sentence.

1. *Articles repeated.*

The article muſt be repeated in French before every ſubſtantive. Example:

Le *cœur*, l'*eſprit*, *et* les *mœurs ſe forment par l'éducation*;
The heart, the mind, and manners, are formed by education.

2. *Pronouns repeated.*

The poſſeſſive and demonſtrative pronouns are repeated in French before every noun, though they are not repeated in Engliſh. Example:

Il faut régler ſon *goût*, ſa *dépenſe et* ſes *plaiſirs*;
We muſt govern *our* taſte, expences, and pleaſures.

Cet *homme et* cette *femme ſont très malheureux*;
This man and woman are very unfortunate.

The perſonal pronouns of the firſt and ſecond perſons are generally repeated before every verb of which they are the nominative caſe; thoſe of the third are alſo repeated before verbs which are in divers tenſes, and when the firſt is affirmative and the other negative, or *vice verſâ*. Example:

Je *dis, et* je *dirai toujours, que vous aviez tort*;
I ſay, and will always ſay, that you were in the wrong.
Il *le dit, mais* il *ne le croit pas, je vous aſſure*;
He ſays ſo, but he does not believe it, I aſſure you.

All perſonal pronouns muſt be repeated in French, before every verb they are governed by, though they are not in Engliſh. Example:

Mon frère vous *eſtime et* vous *honnore*;
My brother eſteems and honours you.

3. *Verbs repeated.*

A verb is repeated in a ſentence of two parts, if one is negative, and the other affirmative. Example:

Il faut tout attendre *de Dieu, et ne rien* attendre *des hommes*;
We muſt expect every thing from God, and nothing from men.

In anſwer to a queſtion, we often repeat the ſame verb the queſtion is aſked by; the Engliſh repeat only the auxiliary. Example:

Avez-vous vu *le Roi? Oui, Monſieur, je l'ai* vu;
Have you ſeen the King? Yes, Sir, I have.

4. *Prepoſitions repeated.*

The prepoſitions *de*, *à*, and *pour*, are uſually repeated before every noun or every verb. Example:

Le Brèſil produit une grande quantité d'indigo, de *ſucre*, de *poivre, et* de *ſalpêtre*;
Braſil produces a great quantity of indigo, ſugar, pepper, and ſalt-petre.

The prepoſitions *avec*, *contre*, *ſans*, &c. are repeated before nouns of different ſignifications. Example:

Il eſt fâché contre *vous*, *mais non pas* contre *votre argent*;
He is angry with you, but not with your money.

SECTION THE FOURTH.

Words which may be elegantly repeated.

1. *Subſtantives elegantly repeated.*

La vue *de l'eſprit a plus d'étendue que la* vue *du corps.*
BOSSUET.

Ce qui ſ'ert à la vanité *n'eſt que* vanité, *tout ce qui n'a que* le monde *pour fondement, ſe diſſipe et s'évanouit avec* le monde. FLECHIER.

C'eſt le privilége de Mr. de Turenne d'avoir pu vaincre l'envie: le mérite *l'avoit fait naître*; le mérite *la fit mourir.* FLECHIER.

Romains, ſouffrirez-vous qu'on vous immole un homme,
Sans qui *Rome* aujourd'hui ceſſeroit d'être *Rome!*
Dis, Valere, dis nous, puiſqu'il faut qu'il périſſe,
Où penſes-tu choiſir un lieu pour ſon ſupplice!
Sera-ce entre ces *murs* que mille et mille voix
Font réſonner encor du bruit de ſes exploits?
Sera-ce hors des *murs*, au milieu de ces places,
Qu'on voit fumer encor du ſang des Curiaces?
CORNEILLE.

2. *Adjectives elegantly repeated.*

Il y a une infinité de choſes, qui ne dépendent que d'une lumière humaine, *d'une expérience* humaine, *d'une pénétration humaine.*

Dès qu'on ſort de la nature, tout devient faux *dans l'éloquence; la chaleur de ſes mouvements les plus paſſionnés, n'eſt qu'une* fauſſe *chaleur; l'éclat de ſes figures, n'eſt qu'un* faux *éclat.*

L'amour propre eſt plus habile, *que le plus* habile *homme du monde.*

3. *The Verb elegantly repeated.*

J'*oublie* que je ſuis malheureux, quand je ſonge que vous ne m'avez pas *oublié.*

La Reine *ſanctifia* ſa cour en ſe *ſanctifiant* elle-même.
FLECHIER.

Il s'eſt efforcé de *connoître* Dieu, qui par ſa grandeur eſt *inconnu* aux hommes, et de *connoître* l'homme qui par ſa vanité eſt *inconnu* à lui-même. FLECHIER.

En *quittant* le monde, on ne *quitte* le plus ſouvent, ni les erreurs, ni les folles paſſions du monde.
BOURDALOUE.

The following verſes of Luſignan to Zaïre contains ſeveral repetitions of ſubſtantives and verbs:

Ma fille, tendre objet de mes dernières peines,
Songe au moins, ſonge au ſang qui coule dans tes veines.
C'eſt le ſang de vingt Rois, tous chrétiens comme moi,
C'eſt le ſang des héros, défenſeurs de ma loi;
C'eſt le ſang des martyrs... O fille encor trop chère?
Connois-tu ton deſtin? ſais-tu quelle eſt ta mère?
Sais-tu bien qu'à l'inſtant que ſon flanc mit au jour
Ce triſte et dernier fruit d'un malheureux amour;
Je la vis maſſacrer par la *main* forcenée,
Par la *main* des brigands à qui tu t'es donnée,
Tes frères, ces martyrs égorgés à mes yeux,
T'ouvrent leurs bras ſanglants tendus du haut des cieux.
Ton Dieu que tu trahis, ton Dieu que tu blaſphêmes,
Pour toi, pour tes péchés eſt mort en *ces lieux* mêmes,
En *ces lieux* où mon bras le ſervit tant de fois,
En *ces lieux* où ſon ſang te parle par ma voix.
Vois ces murs, *vois* ce temple envahi par tes maîtres;
Tout annonce le Dieu qu'ont vengé tes ancêtres.

Tourne les yeux; ſa tombe eſt près de ce palais.
C'eſt ici la montagne où lavant nos forfaits,
Il voulut expirer ſous les coups de l'impie:
C'eſt là que de ſa tombe il rappela ſa vie:
Tu ne ſaurois marcher dans cet auguſte lieu,
Tu n'y *peux* faire un pas, ſans y trouver ton Dieu;
Et tu n'y *peux* reſter ſans renier ton père,
Ton honneur qui te parle, et ton Dieu qui t'éclaire.

VOLTAIRE.

CHAPTER XXIV.

Diſtinction in French between many Words which are expreſſed in the ſame Manner in Engliſh.

1. AN, - - - ANNEE, - - - *Year.*

The word *year* is expreſſed by *an*, when it is preceded by the cardinal numbers *one, two, three, four*, &c. and by *année* in all other circumſtances, even when it is preceded by the ordinal numbers *the firſt, the ſecond, the third*, &c. thus we ſay:

Il y a deux ans *que mon père eſt mort*; and, *Mon père mourut la ſeconde* année *de la république.*

It is two years ſince my father died; My father died the ſecond year of the republic.

Toute l'année *a été froide*; The whole year has been cold, and not *tout l'an.*

However, we ſay, *Tous les ans*, not *toutes les années*, for the words *every year*. Example:

Je vais tous les ans *en France et en Italie*;
I go *every year* to France, and to Italy.

2. Jour, - - - Journée, - - - *Day.*
3. Matin, - - Matinée, - - - *Morning.*
4. Soir, - - - Soirée, - - - - *Evening.*

The word *day* is expreſſed by *jour*; *morning*, by *matin*; and *evening*, by *ſoir*, when we do not expreſs any particular duration of time; they are expreſſed by *journée*, *matinée*, and *ſoirée*, when we expreſs a certain duration. Example:

2. *Les* jours *ſont courts à preſent*; The *days* are ſhort now.
J'ai été malade toute la journée;
I have been ſick all the *day* long.

3. *Je vais à la chaſſe tous les* matins;
I go a hunting every *morning*.
Il a plu toute la matinée; It has rained all the *morning*.

4. *J'irai vous voir demain au* ſoir;
I will go and ſee you to-morrow *evening*.
Je paſſerai la ſoirée *avec vous*;
I will ſpend the *evening* with you.

5. Battre, - - - Frapper, - - - *to Beat.*

The verb *to beat*, is rendered by *frapper*, when we give but one blow, and by *battre* when we give many; thus, *on peut frapper ſans battre, mais on ne peut battre ſans frapper*. Voyez les ſynonimes de l'Abbé Girard.

6. Combat, - - - Bataille, - - - *Battle.*

The word *battle* is expreſſed in French by *combat*, when it denotes a partial action, ſuch as happens at the paſſage of a river, at the intercepting of a convoy, &c. It is expreſſed by *bataille*, when it denotes a general action of two armies, ſuch as were *la bataille de Pharſale, la bataille de Fontenoi, la bataille de Jemmape*, &c.

7. Casser, - - - Rompre, - - - *to Break.*

The verb *to break*, is expreſſed by *caſſer*, when we break ſomething frail, and by *rompre*, when the object is not frail: thus we ſay,

Vous avez caſſé *mon verre*, and *vous avez* rompu *mon bâton*;
You have *broke* my glaſs, you have *broke* my ſtick.
Not *vous avez* rompu *mon verre* & caſſé *mon bâton*.

8. Connoitre, - - - Savoir, - - - *to Know*.

The verb *to know*, is always expreſſed by *connoître*, when it ſignifies *to be acquainted with*, and moſt commonly by *ſavoir* in all other circumſtances: thus we ſay,
Connoiſſez *vous cette Dame là?* Do you *know* that lady?
Savez *vous votre leçon?* Do you *know* your leſſon?

9. Marcher, - - - Se promener, - - - *to Walk*.

The verb *to walk*, is expreſſed in French by *marcher*, when we walk for buſineſs, and by *ſe promener*, when we walk for pleaſure: thus we ſay,
J'ai été obligé de marcher *beaucoup aujourd'hui*;
I have been obliged *to walk* much to day.
Je me ſuis promené *dans le jardin avec mon frère*;
I have *walked* in the garden with my brother.

10. Amener, - - - Apporter, - - - *to Bring*.

The verb *to bring*, is expreſſed in French by *amener*, when the object can walk, and by *porter*, when it cannot; thus we ſay,
Amenez *votre épouſe avec vous*; *Bring* your wife with you.
Apportez-*moi mes livres*; *Bring* me my books.

11. Mener, - - - Porter, - - - *to Carry*.

The verb *to carry*, is expreſſed in French by *mener*, when the object can walk, and by *porter*, when it cannot; thus we ſay,
Menez *ce cheval à l'écurie*; *Carry* that horſe to the ſtable.
Portez *ce chapeau à votre frère*;
Carry that hat to your brother.

12. NEUF, - - - NOUVEAU, - - - *New.*

The word *new*, is moſt commonly expreſſed by *neuf* or *neuve*, when we ſpeak of material objects; it is always expreſſed by *nouveau* or *nouvelle*, when we ſpeak of an object which is not material; thus we ſay,

Un chapeau neuf; *Un* nouveau *projet.*
A *new* hat; A *new* projet.
Une maiſon neuve; *Une* nouvelle *conſtitution.*
A *new* houſe; A *new* conſtitution.

13. AVANT, - - - DEVANT, - - - *Before.*

The word *before*, is expreſſed in French by *avant*, when it denotes a priority of time, and by *devant*, when it ſignifies in preſence. Example:

J'aurai fini avant *midi*; I ſhall have done *before* noon.
Je n'oſois paroître devant *vous*;
I dared not appear *before* you.

14. DANS, - - - EN, - - - *In.*

The prepoſition *in*, is expreſſed in French by *dans*, when the noun following is particulariſed, and by *en* when it is not. See Wailly, page 283. Thus we ſay,

La gloire d'un monarque conſiſte moins dans *la grandeur de ſes états, que* dans *le bonheur de ſes peuples*; not *en.*
The glory of a king conſiſts leſs in the extent of his dominions, than in the happineſs which he procures to his ſubjects.
Votre frère eſt en *priſon*; Your brother is in jail. Not *dans* priſon.

If we were to add an adjective to the word *jail*, then it would be particulariſed, and the word *in* ſhould be expreſſed by *dans*, and not by *en*; as, Your brother is in a dark jail, *Votre frère eſt dans une priſon obſcure*, not *en priſon obſcure.* This is the reaſon why the article is always uſed after *dans*, according to rule the ſecond of the Syntax, and not after *en.*

Note. In the is uſually expreſſed by *au*, before a ſubſtantive

ſingular maſculine, and by *à la*, before a ſubſtantive feminine. Example:

Au commencement, in the beginning; *à la fin*, in the end.

15. PLUS, - - - DAVANTAGE, - - - *More*.

The word *more*, is always expreſſed by *plus*, when it is not at the end of a ſentence, and by *davantage* when it is at the end of a ſentence affirmative. Example:

Je ſuis plus *jeune que vous*, (not *davantage jeune*);
I am younger than you.

Vous n'avez pas de pain, en voulez-vous davantage? (not *en voulez-vous* plus);
You have no bread; will you have ſome more?

When the word *more* is at the end of a ſentence negative, it is often indifferently expreſſed by *plus*, or by *davantage*. Example:

Je ne mangerai plus, or, *je ne mangerai* pas davantage;
I will not eat any more.

16. POUR, - - - PENDANT, - - - *For*.

The word *for* is expreſſed in French by *pendant*, when it is followed by a word which denotes a certain duration of time, ſuch as *year, month, day, hour*, &c. it is expreſſed by *pour* in other circumſtances. Example:

J'*étudie* pendant *deux heures tous les jours*; not *pour deux heures*;
I ſtudy for two hours every day.

J'*ai une lettre* pour *votre frère*; not *pendant votre frère*.
I have a letter for your brother.

17. SUR, - - - DESSUS, - - - *Upon*.

18. SOUS, - - - DESSOUS, - - - *Under*.

When the words *upon* and *under* are followed by a noun, they are prepoſitions, and expreſſed, *upon* by *ſur*, and *under* by *ſous*. Example:

Votre livre eſt ſur *la table*; your book is *upon* the table.
Vos ſouliers ſont ſous *le lit*; your ſhoes are *under* the bed.

When the words *upon* and *under* are not followed by a noun, they are adverbs, and expreſſed, *upon* by *deſſus*, and *under* by *deſſous*. Example:

Vous croyiez le chien ſous *le lit, & il étoit* deſſus;
You thought the dog *under* the bed, and it was *upon* it.
Votre mouchoir n'eſt pas ſur *la chaiſe, mais* deſſous;
Your handkerchief is nôt *upon* the chair, but it is *under* it.

19. En Campagne, - - - à la Campagne.

We make uſe of *en campagne* only when we ſpeak of the army, or the motion of troops, as,

L'armée ſe mettra bientôt *en campagne.*

We muſt make uſe of *à la campagne*, when we ſpeak of going or living in the country. Example:

Venez nous voir *à la campagne.*

Explanation of the Marks and Abbreviations made Uſe of in the following Series of Verbs.

(1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10,) - - - mark the ten regular conjugations: all the verbs preceded by any of theſe figures are regular. Thoſe preceded by number 1, are conjugated after *parler*, page 65; thoſe preceded by number 2, are conjugated after *agir*; and ſo on for others.

(*ir*) - - - denotes an irregular verb, which is conjugated in the grammar, page 88, and following.

(*ge, de, ac*) - - - denote the caſes which the verbs moſt commonly govern in French; *ge.* denotes the genitive; *da.* the dative, and *ac.* the accuſative.

(*de, à, pour*) - - - are the French prepoſitions which the verbs require before the next, when it is to be put in the infinitive. Thoſe followed by (o), govern the infinitive without prepoſition.

(*Subj.*) - - - denotes that the next verb muſt always be put in the ſubjunctive in French, when the infinitive is not required.

(*Ind. Subj.*) - - - denote that the verbs govern the indicative when they are affirmatively uſed; and moſt commonly the ſubjunctive, when they are attended with a negation, or an interrogation.

(*Se* or *s'*) - - - denote that the verb is reflected in French, and muſt be conjugated with two pronouns: thus, *je me* is uſed in the firſt perſon ſingular; *tu te* in the ſecond; *il ſe* in the third: *nous nous* in the firſt perſon plural; *vous vous* in the ſecond; and *ils ſe* in the third, as the verb *ſe lever*; ſee page 85.

N. B. The following ſeries of verbs points out, 1. what verbs are regular, and what irregular; 2. which caſe they govern; 3. what prepoſition they require before the infinitive; and 4. which are thoſe which govern the ſubjunctive: thus by this uſeful vocabulary four great difficulties of the French language will be removed.

AN

ALPHABETICAL SERIES

OF THE

FRENCH VERBS,

REGULAR AND IRREGULAR.

ALL regular Verbs are conjugated after one of the ten following, which are themselves conjugated at full length in the page mentioned after each:

1, Parler, - - - - - *to speak*, see page 65
2, Agir, - - - - - *to act*, - - - - - 68
3, Sentir, - - - - *to smell*, - - - - 70
4, Tenir, - - - - *to hold*, - - - - - 71
5, Recevoir, - - - *to receive*, - - - - 73
6, Faire, - - - - - *to do*, - - - - - - 74
7, Craindre, - - - *to fear*, - - - - - 76
8, Connoître, - - - *to know*, - - - - 77
9, Instruire, - - - *to instruct*, - - - 79
10, Vendre, - - - - *to sell*, - - - - - 80

20 MA 59

Conjugations.		Cases.		Infinitive.
1	Abaiſſer,	ac.	*to bring down*	
1	abandonner,	ac.	*to abandon*	
10	abattre,	ac.	*to pull down*	
1	abhorrer,	ac.	*to abhor*	
1	abjurer,	ac.	*to abjure*	
2	abolir,	ac.	*to aboliſh*	
1	abonder en,		*to abound with*	
1	s'abonner,		*to compound* -	pour
1	aborder,	ac.	*to land*	
1	s'aboucher avec,		*to confer with* -	pour
2	aboutir,	da.	*to come to*	
1	aboyer,		*to bark*	

1	abréger,	ac.	*to abridge*	
1	abreuver,	ac.	*to water*	
1	abroger,	ac.	*to abrogate*	
2	abrutir,	ac.	*to ſtupefy*	
1	s'abſenter,	ge.	*to abſent one's ſelf*	
1	abſorber,	ac.	*to abſorb*	
ir.	abſoudre,	ge. ac.	*to abſolve*	
4	s'abſténir,	ge.	*to forbear* -	de
ir.	abſtraire,	ac.	*to abſtract*	
1	abuſer,	ge.	*to abuſe*	
1	accabler,	ge. ac.	*to overwhelm*	
1	accélérer,	ac.	*to accelerate*	
1	accentuer,	ac.	*to accent*	
1	accepter	ge. ac.	*to accept*	
1	accompagner,	ac.	*to accompany*	
2	accomplir.	ac.	*to accompliſh*	
1	accorder,	da. ac.	*to grant* (ind. ſubj.)	de
1	s'accorder		*to agree* -	à
1	accoſter,	ac.	*to accoſt*	
1	accoucher,	ge.	*to be delivered*	
1	accoucher,	ac.	*to deliver a woman*	
1	s'accouder ſur,		*to lean upon*	
2	accoucir,	ac.	*to ſhorten*	
ir.	accourir,	da.	*to run out*	
1	accoutumer,	da. ac.	*to accuſtom* -	à
1	s'accoutumer,	da.	*to uſe one's ſelf* -	à
1	accréditer,	ac.	*to give credit*	
1	accrocher,	ac.	*to hang upon a hook*	
8	accroître,	ac.	*to increaſe*	
ir.	accueillir,	ac.	*to welcome*	
1	accumuler,	ac.	*to heap up*	
1	accuſer,	ge. ac.	*to accuſe* -	de
1	acérer,	ac.	*to ſteel*	
1	s'acheminer,		*to ſet forward*	
1	acheter,	ac.	*to buy*	
1	achever,	ac.	*to finiſh* -	de
ir.	acquérir,	ac.	*to acquire*	
1	acquieſcer,	da.	*to yield*	
1	s'acquitter,	ge.	*to diſcharge*	
1	adapter,	da. ac.	*to adapt*	
1	additionner,	da. ac.	*to make an addition*	
1	addreſſer,	da. ac.	*to direct*	

1	adhérer,	da.	*to adhere to*		
1	adjuger,	da. ac.	*to adjudge*		
ir.	admettre,	da. ac.	*to admit*	-	à
1	adminiſtrer,	ac.	*to adminiſter*		
1	admirer	ge. ac.	*to admire*	-	(ſubj.)
1	s'adonner,	da.	*to apply one's ſelf to*		à
1	adopter,	ge. ac.	*to adopt*		
1	adorer,	ac.	*to adore*		
2	adoucir,	ac.	*to ſoften*		
1	s'adreſſer,	da.	*to apply one's ſelf*		
1	affamer,	ac.	*to ſtarve*		
1	affecter,	ac.	*to affect*		
1	affectionner,	ac.	*to love*		
1	affermer,	ac.	*to let*		
2	affermir,	ac.	*to ſtrengthen*		
1	afficher,	ac.	*to poſt up*		
1	affiler,	ac.	*to ſharpen*		
1	affilier,	ac.	*to adopt*		
1	affirmer,	ac.	*to aſſert*	-	(ind. ſubj.)
1	affliger,	ge. ac.	*to afflict*	-	de
1	affluer,		*to abound*		
2	affoiblir,	ac.	*to weaken*		
2	affranchir,	ac.	*to ſet free*		
1	affronter,	ac.	*to deceive*		
1	s'agenouiller,		*to kneel down*		
1	aggraver,	ac.	*to aggravate*		
1	agioter,		*to ſpeculate*		
2	agir,		*to act*		
1	agiter,	ac.	*to agitate*		
2	aggrandir,	ac.	*to enlarge*		
1	aggréger,	ac.	*to aggregate*		
2	s'aguerrir,		*to inure one's ſelf*	-	à
1	aider,	da.	*to help*	-	à
2	aigrir,	ac.	*to exaſperate*		
1	aiguilloner,	ac.	*to ſtir up*		
1	aiguiſer,	ac.	*to ſharpen*		
1	aimer,	ac.	*to love*	-	à
1	ajouter,	da. ac.	*to add*	-	(ind. ſubj.)
1	ajuſter,	ac.	*to fit, to adjuſt*		
1	alarmer,	ac.	*to alarm*		
1	aliéner,	ac.	*to alienate*		

1	aligner,	ac.	*to ſquare*	
1	alaiter,	ac.	*to ſuckle*	
1	alléger,	ac.	*to alleviate*	
1	alléguer,	ac.	*to alledge*	(ind. ſubj.)
ir.	aller,		*to go*	- o
1	allier,	da. ac.	*to allay*	
1	s'allier,	da.	*to make an alliance*	
1	allumer,	ac.	*to light*	
1	allonger,	ac.	*to lengthen*	
1	altérer,	ac.	*to adulterate* or *change*	
1	amaſſer,	ac.	*to heap up*	
1	amender,		*to grow better*	
1	amener,	da. ac.	*to bring*	
1	ameuter,	ac.	*to riſe a mob*	- à
2	amollir,	ac.	*to mollify*	
1	amonceler,	ac.	*to heap up*	
1	amorcer,	ac.	*to allure*	
2	amortir,	ac.	*to quench*	
1	amplifier,	ac.	*to amplify*	
1	amuſer,	ac.	*to amuſe*	- à
2	anéantir,	ac.	*to annihilate*	
1	animer,	ac.	*to animate*	
1	annoncer,	da ac.	*to announce*	(ind. ſubj.) o
1	annuler,	ac.	*to abrogate*	
2	anoblir,	ac.	*to ennoble*	
1	anticiper,	ac.	*to anticipate*	
2	aplanir,	ac.	*to level*	
1	appaiſer,	ac.	*to appeaſe*	
4	appartenir,	da.	*to belong.*	
2	appauvrir,		*to grow poor*	
1	appeller,	ac.	*to call*	
5	appercevoir,	ac.	*to perceive*	(ind. ſubj.) o
5	s'appercevoir,	ge.	*to perceive*	- de
1	appetiſſer,	ac.	*to diminiſh*	
1	s'appetiſſer,		*to grow ſhort*	
2	applatir,	ac.	*to make flat*	
2	applaudir,	da.	*to applaud*	
1	appliquer,	da. ac.	*to apply*	
1	apporter,	da. ac.	*to bring*	- à
1	appoſer,	ac.	*to put in*	
1	apprécier,	ac.	*to appraiſe*	

1	appréhender,		ac.	*to fear*	(ſubj.) de
ir.	apprendre,		ac.	*to learn*	(ind. ſubj.) à
1	apprêter,		ac.	*to prepare*	- à
1	apprivoiſer,		ac.	*to tame*	
1	approcher,		ac.	*to approach*	
2	approfondir,		ac.	*to examine into*	
1	approprier,	da.	ac.	*to appropriate*	
1	s'approprier;		ac.	*to uſurp*	
1	approuver,	ge.	ac.	*to approve*	- de
1	appuyer,		ac.	*to prop*	
1	s'appuyer ſur,			*to lean upon*	
1	arbitrer,		ac.	*to arbitrate*	
1	arborer,		ac.	*to ſet up*	
1	argumenter,			*to infer*	
1	armer,	ge.	ac.	*to arm*	- pour
1	arracher,		ac.	*to pull out*	
1	arranger,		ac.	*to ſet in order*	
1	arrêter,		ac.	*to ſtop*	- de
1	s'arrêter,		da.	*to ſtay*	- à
1	arriver,		da.	*to come to*	
1	s'arroger,		ac.	*to claim to one's ſelf*	de
2	arrondir,		ac.	*to make round*	
1	arroſer,		ac.	*to water*	
1	articuler,		ac.	*to articulate*	
1	aſpirer,	ge.	da.	*to aim at*	
1	aſſaiſonner,		ac.	*to ſeaſon*	
1	aſſaſſiner,		ac.	*to aſſaſſinate*	
1	aſſembler,		ac.	*to bring together*	
ir.	aſſeoir,		ac.	*to ſit*	- pour
1	aſſiéger,		ac.	*to beſiege*	
1	aſſigner,		ac.	*to aſſign*	- à
1	aſſiſter,		ac.	*to relieve*	- à
1	aſſocier,	da.	ac.	*to aſſociate*	
1	aſſommer,		ac.	*to knock down*	
2	aſſortir,		ac.	*to match*	
2	aſſoupir,		ac.	*to make drowſy*	
2	s'aſſoupir,			*to fall aſleep*	
2	aſſouvir,		ac.	*to glut*	
2	aſſujettir,		ac.	*to ſubdue*	
1	aſſurer,	da.	ac.	*to affirm*	(ind. ſubj.) o
7	aſtreindre,	da.	ac.	*to ſubject*	- à

1	attacher,	da. ac.	*to bind*	
1	s'attacher,	da.	*to ſtick* -	à
1	attaquer,	ac.	*to attack*	
1	s'attaquer,	da.	*to ſtand up againſt*	
7	atteindre,	da.	*to reach*	
1	atteler,	ac.	*to put horſes to a coach*	
10	attendre,	ac.	*to expect* -	à
10	s'attendre,	da.	*to hope for* -	à
2	attendrir,	ac.	*to ſoften*	
2	s'attendrir,		*to be moved*	
1	attenter,	ac.	*to attempt* -	à
1	atterrer,	ac.	*to ſtrike down*	
1	atteſter,	ac.	*to atteſt* (ind. ſubj)	o
1	attirer,	da. ac.	*to attract*	
1	s'attirer,	ac.	*to draw upon one's ſelf*	
1	attiſer,	ac.	*to ſtir up*	
1	attraper,	ac.	*to catch*	
1	attribuer,	da. ac.	*to aſcribe*	
1	s'attriſter,		*to be ſorrowful*	de
1	attrouper,	ac.	*to aſſemble*	
1	s'attrouper,		*to troop*	
1	avaler,	ac.	*to ſwallow*	
2	avertir,	ge. ac.	*to warn* -	de
1	aveugler,	ac.	*to blind*	
1	augmenter,	ac.	*to increaſe*	
1	augurer,		*to augurate* (ind. ſubj.)	
2	avilir,	ac.	*to diſgrace*	
ir.	avoir,	ac.	*to have* -	à
1	avorter,		*to miſcarry*	
1	avouer,	da. ac.	*to confeſs* (ind. ſubj.)	o
1	autoriſer,	da. ac.	*to authoriſe* -	à

B

1	Babiller,	*to prattle*	
1	badiner,	*to joke*	
1	ſe baigner,	*to bathe* -	pour
1	bâiller,	*to yawn*	
1	baiſer,	ac. *to kiſs*	
1	baiſſer,	ac. *to let down*	
1	ſe baiſſer,	*to ſtoop*	

1	balancer,	ac.	*to balance*	
1	balayer,	ac.	*to ſweep*	pour
1	balotter,	ac.	*to toſs*	
1	bander,	ac	*to bend*	
2	bannir,	ge. ac.	*to baniſh*	
1	baptiſer,	ac.	*to baptiſe*	
1	barbouiller,	ac.	*to daub*	
1	barrer,	ac.	*to bar*	
1	barricader,	ac.	*to barricade*	
1	baſſiner,	ac.	*to warm a bed*	
1	bâter,	ac.	*to ſaddle*	
2	bâtir,	ac.	*to build*	pour
10	battre,	ac.	*to beat*	
1	bêler,		*to bleat*	
1	bercer,	ac.	*to lull aſleep*	
1	biaiſer,		*to uſe evaſions*	
1	biffer,	ac.	*to blot out*	
1	blâmer,	ge. ac.	*to blame*	de
2	blanchir,	ac.	*to whiten*	
1	blaſphêmer,	ac.	*to blaſpheme*	
1	bleſſer,	ac.	*to wound*	
1	bloquer,	ac.	*to block up*	
ir.	boire,	ac.	*to drink*	
1	boiſer,	ac.	*to wainſcot*	
1	bombarder,	ac.	*to bombard*	
2	bondir,		*to jump about*	
1	border,	ac.	*to border*	
1	borner,	ac.	*to limit*	à
ir.	bouillir.		*to boil*	
1	boulanger,	ac.	*to bake*	
1	boulverſer,	ac.	*to overthrow*	
1	bourdonner,		*to buzz*	
1	boutonner,	ac.	*to button*	
1	branler,	ac.	*to ſhake*	
1	braſſer,	ac.	*to brew*	
1	braver,	ac.	*to affront*	
1	brider,	ac.	*to bridle*	
1	briguer,	ac.	*to ſue for an office*	
1	briller,		*to ſhine*	
1	broder,	ac.	*to embroider*	
1	broncher,		*to ſtumble*	

1	broſſer,		ac.	*to bruſh*	
1	brouiller,		ac.	*to confound*	
1	broyer,		ac.	*to grind*	
1	brûler,		ac.	*to burn*	
2	brunir,		ac.	*to burniſh*	
1	bruſquer,		ac.	*to blunt*	
1	butiner,			*to plunder*	

C

1	Cabaler,			*to cabal*	pour
1	cacher,		ac.	*to hide*	
1	cacheter,		ac.	*to ſeal up.*	
1	calciner,		ac.	*to calcinate*	
1	calmer,		ac.	*to calm*	
1	calomnier,		ac.	*to ſlander*	
1	camper,		ac.	*to incamp*	
1	canonner,		ac.	*to ſtorm*	
1	ſe cantonner,			*to canton*	
1	capituler,			*to capitulate*	
1	caractériſer,		ac.	*to characteriſe*	
1	carrer,		ac.	*to ſquare*	
1	caſſer,		ac.	*to break*	
1	cathéchiſer,		ac.	*to inſtruct*	
1	cauſer,			*to prattle*	
1	célébrer,		ac.	*to celebrate*	
1	céder,	da.	ac.	*to yield*	
1	céler,		ac.	*to conceal*	
1	cenſurer,	ge.	ac.	*to cenſure*	
1	certifier,	da.	ac.	*to certify*	(ind. ſubj.) o
1	ceſſer,		ac.	*to ceaſe*	de
1	chagriner,		ac.	*to vex*	de
1	chanceler,			*to ſtagger*	
1	changer,		ac.	*to change*	
1	chanter,		ac.	*to ſing*	
1	charger,	ge.	ac.	*to charge*	de
1	charmer,		ac.	*to charm*	
1	chaſſer,	ge.	ac.	*to expel*	
1	chauffer,		ac.	*to warm*	
1	cheminer,			*to walk*	
1	chercher,		ac.	*to look for*	à

1	chiffrer,		ac.	*to number*	
2	choiſir,		ac.	*to chuſe* -	de
1	choquer,		ac.	*to offend*	
1	cicatriſer,		ac.	*to cicatriſe*	
1	cimenter,		ac.	*to cement*	
ir.	circonſcrire,		ac.	*to circumſcribe*	
1	circonſtancier,		ac.	*to deſcribe*	
1	circuler,			*to circulate*	
1	citer,		ac.	*to ſummon* -	à
1	civiliſer,		ac.	*to civilize*	
1	clarifier,		ac.	*to clarify*	
1	coaguler,		ac.	*to coagulate*	
1	coller,		ac.	*to glue*	
1	colorer,		ac.	*to colour*	
10	combattre,		ac.	*to fight* -	pour
1	combler,		ac.	*to fill up*	
1	commander,	da.	ac.	*to command*	ſubj. de
1	commencer,		ac.	*to begin* -	à
1	commenter,		ac.	*to comment*	
1	commercer,			*to trade*	
ir.	commettre,	da.	ac.	*to commit* -	à
1	communiquer,	da.	ac.	*to communicate*	
1	comparer,	da.	ac.	*to compare*	
2	compatir,	ge.	da.	*to compaſſionate*	
1	compenſer,		ac.	*to compenſate*	
ir.	complaire,		da.	*to pleaſe*	
1	complimenter,		ac.	*to compliment*	
1	compoſer,		ac.	*to compoſe*	
ir.	comprendre,		ac.	*to underſtand*	
1	comprimer,		ac.	*to ſqueeze*	
ir.	ſe compromettre,			*to expoſe one's ſelf*	
1	compter,		ac.	*to count* -	o
1	concentrer,		ac.	*to concenter*	
1	concerner,		ac.	*to concern*	
5	concevoir,		ac.	*to conceive*	
1	concilier,		ac.	*to conciliate*	
	conclure,		ac.	*to conclude* (ind. ſubj.)	de
ir.	concourir,		da.	*to concur* -	à
	conquérir,		ac.	*to conquer*	
1	condamner,	da.	ac.	*to condemn* -	à
10	condeſcendre,	ge.	ac.	*to condeſcend* -	à

9	conduire,	ac.	*to conduct*		
1	confeſſer,	da. ac.	*to confeſs*	(ind. ſubj.)	
1	confier,	da. ac.	*to truſt*		
1	confiner,	ac.	*to confine*		
ir.	confire,	ac.	*to pickle*		
1	confirmer,	da. ac.	*to confirm*		
10	confondre	ac.	*to confound*		
1	conformer,	da. ac.	*to conform*		
1	conforter,	ac.	*to comfort*		
1	confronter,	ac.	*to compare*		
1	congédier,	ac.	*to diſmiſs*		
1	conjecturer,	ac.	*to gueſs*	(ind. ſubj.)	
7	conjoindre,	ac.	*to conjoin*	(ſubj.)	
2	conjurer,	ac.	*to intreat*	-	de
8	connoître,	ac.	*to know*		
ir.	conquérir,	ac.	*to conquer*		
1	conſacrer,	ac.	*to conſecrate*		
1	conſeiller,	da. ac.	*to adviſe*	-	de
3	conſentir,	da.	*to conſent*	-	à
1	conſerver,	ac.	*to preſerve*		
1	conſidérer,	ac.	*to conſider*		
1	conſigner,	ac.	*to conſign*		
1	conſiſter,		*to conſiſt*	-	à
1	conſoler,	ac.	*to comfort*	-	de
1	conſolider,	ac.	*to conſolidate*		
1	conſpirer contre,		*to complot againſt*		
1	conſterner,	ac.	*to affright*		
1	conſtiper,	ac.	*to make coſtive*		
1	conſtituer,	ac.	*to appoint*		
9	conſtruire,	ac.	*to build*		
1	conſulter,	ac.	*to conſult*		
1	conſumer,	ac.	*to conſume*		
1	contempler,	ac.	*to contemplate*		
4	contenir,	ac.	*to comprehend*		
1	contenter,	ac.	*to ſatisfy*	-	de
1	conter,	ac.	*to count*	-	o
1	conteſter,	ac.	*to conteſt*		
1	continuer,	ac.	*to go on*	-	de *or* à
1	contracter,	ac.	*to contract*		
7	contraindre,	ac.	*to compel*	-	de *or* à
1	contrarier,	ac.	*to contradict*		

1	contrebalancer,	ac.	*to counterpoiſe*		
ir.	contrédire,	ac.	*to contradict*		
6	contrefaire,	ac.	*to counterfeit*		
1	contremander,	ac.	*to countermand*		
1	contréminer,	ac.	*to countermine*		
1	contréſigner,	ac.	*to counterſign*		
4	contrévenir,	ge. da.	*to infringe*		
1	contribuer,	da.	*to contribute*	-	à
1	contrôler,	ac.	*to controul*		
ir.	convaincre,	ac.	*to convince*	-	de
4	convenir,	ge.	*to agree*	(ind. ſubj.)	de
1	converſer avec,		*to converſe*		
2	convertir,	ac.	*to convert*		
1	co-opérer,	ge. da.	*to co-operate*		
1	copier,	ac.	*to tranſcribe*		
1	corder,	ac.	*to twiſt*		
10	correſpondre,	ge. da.	*to correſpond*		
1	corriger,	ge. ac.	*to correct*		
1	corroborer,	ac.	*to ſtrengthen*		
10	corrompre,	ac.	*to corrupt*		
1	cotoyer,	ac.	*to coaſt along*		
1	coucher,	ac.	*to put to bed*		
1	ſe coucher,		*to go to bed*		
ir.	coudre,	ac.	*to ſew*		
1	couler,		*to flow*		
1	couper,	ac.	*to cut*		
ir.	courir,		*to run*		
ir.	couvrir,	ac.	*to cover*		
1	coûter,	ac.	*to coſt*	-	pour
1	couver,	ac.	*to brood*		
1	cracher,		*to ſpit*		
7	craindre,	ac.	*to fear*	-	(ſubj.) de
1	créer,	ac.	*to create*		
1	créver,		*to burſt out*		
1	creuſer,	ac.	*to dig*	-	pour
1	crier,		*to cry*		
1	critiquer,	ac.	*to cavil*		
ir.	croire,	ac.	*to believe*	(ind. ſubj.)	o
1	croiſer,	ac.	*to croſs*		
8	croître,		*to increaſe*		
ir.	cueillir,	ac.	*to gather*		

D

1	Daigner,		*to deign*	-
1	damner,	ac.	*to damn*	
1	danſer,	ac.	*to dance*	
1	débander,	ac.	*to untie*	
1	débarquer,	ac.	*to diſembark*	
1	débarraſſer,	ac.	*to diſengage*	
1	débourrer,	ac.	*to unbar*	
10	débattre,	ac.	*to debate*	
10	ſe débattre,		*to ſtruggle*	
1	débaucher,	ac.	*to debauch*	
1	débiter,	ac.	*to ſell*	
1	déborder,	ac.	*to unborder*	
1	ſe déborder,		*to overflow*	
1	débotter,	ac.	*to pull off one's boots*	
1	débouсher,	ac.	*to unſtop*	
1	débourſer,	ac.	*to diſburſe*	
1	déboutonner,	ac.	*to unbutton*	
1	débrider,	ac.	*to unbridle*	
1	débrouiller	ac.	*to clear*	
1	débuſquer	ge. ac.	*to drive out*	
1	décacheter,	ac.	*to unſeal*	
1	décamper,		*to run away*	
1	décapiter,	ac.	*to behead*	
1	décéder,		*to die*	
1	déceler,	ac.	*to detect*	
1	décerner,	ac.	*to decree*	(ind. ſubj.)
1	déchaîner,	ac.	*to let looſe*	
1	ſe déchaîner contre,		*to inveigh againſt*	
1	décharger,	ac.	*to unload*	
1	décharner,	ac.	*to pull off the fleſh*	
1	déchauſſer,	ac.	*to put the ſtockings off*	
1	déchiffrer,	ac.	*to decypher*	
1	déchiqueter,	ac.	*to cut*	
1	déchirer,	ac.	*to tear off*	
1	décider,	ac.	*to decide*	(ind. ſubj.) de
1	décimer,	ac.	*to decimate*	
1	déclamer contre,		*to inveigh againſt*	
1	déclarer,	da. ac.	*to declare*	(ind. ſubj.) o
1	décliner,		*to decay*	

1	décoiffer,	ac.	*to put off the head dreſs*	
1	décoller,	ac.	*to unglue*	
1	décolorer,	ac.	*to diſcolour*	
1	décompoſer,	ac.	*to diſſolve*	
1	déconcerter,	ac.	*to put out* -	de
1	déconter,	ac.	*to diſcount*	
1	décorder,	ac.	*to untwiſt*	
1	décorer,	ac.	*to adorn*	
ir.	découdre,	ac.	*to unſew*	
1	découler,		*to flow*	
1	découper,	ac.	*to cut*	
1	découpler,	ac.	*to uncouple*	
1	décourager,	ac.	*to diſcourage* -	de
ir.	découvrir,	ac.	*to diſcover*	
1	décréditer,	ac.	*to diſcredit*	
1	décréter,	ac.	*to decree* (ind. ſubj.)	de
1	décrier,	ac.	*to diſcredit*	
ir.	décrire,	ac.	*to deſcribe*	
8	décroître,	ac.	*to decreaſe*	
1	décroter,	ac.	*to rub off the dirt*	
1	dédaigner,	ac.	*to deſpiſe* -	o
1	dédier,	da. ac.	*to dedicate*	
ir.	dédire,	ac.	*to unſay*	
1	dédommager,	ge. ac.	*to indemnify*	
9	déduire,	ge. ac.	*to ſubtract*	
6	défaire,	ac.	*to undo*	
10	défendre,	da. ac.	*to forbid* - (ſubj.)	de
1	déférer,	da. —	*to yield*	
1	défier,	ac.	*to challenge*	de
1	ſe défier,	ge. —	*to diſtruſt*	
1	défigurer,	ac.	*to disform*	
1	défiler,	ac.	*to unſtring*	
2	définir,	ac.	*to define*	
2	défleurir,		*to let fall its bloſſom*	
1	défoncer,	ac.	*to ſtave a caſk*	
1	déformer,	ac.	*to put out of form*	
1	défrayer,	ac.	*to defray*	
1	défricher,	ac.	*to clear*	
1	défriſer,	ac.	*to uncurl*	
1	dégager,	ge. ac.	*to diſengage*	
1	dégaîner,	ac.	*to unſheath a ſword*	

2	dégarnir,		ac.	*to unfurniſh*	
1	dégeler,			*to thaw*	
1	dégénérer,			*to degenerate*	
2	dégourdir,		ac.	*to revive*	
1	dégoûter,	ge.	ac.	*to diſguſt*	de
1	ſe dégoûter,	ge.	—	*to be weary*	de
1	dégoutter,			*to trickle down*	
1	dégrader,		ac.	*to degrade*	
1	dégraiſſer,		ac.	*to take away the fat*	
1	déguiſer,		ac.	*to diſſemble*	
1	déjeûner,			*to breakfaſt*	
7	déjoindre,		ac.	*to disjoin*	
1	délacer,		ac.	*to unlace*	
1	délaiſſer,		ac.	*to abandon*	
1	délaſſer,		ac.	*to unweary*	
1	délayer,		ac.	*to dilate*	
1	déléguer,		ac.	*to delegate*	
1	délibérer,	ſur.		*to deliberate*	
1	délier,		ac.	*to untie*	
1	délivrer,	ge.	ac.	*to reſcue*	
1	déloger,			*to remove*	
1	démander,	da.	ac.	*to aſk for*	(ſubj.) de
1	démanger,			*to itch*	
1	démâter,		ac.	*to unmaſt*	
1	démêler,		ac.	*to diſentangle*	
3	démentir,		ac.	*to give the lie*	
ir.	ſe démettre,		ge.	*to reſign*	de
1	démeubler,		ac.	*to unfurniſh*	
1	démeurer,			*to live* or *to ſtay*	pour *or* à
2	démolir,		ac.	*to demoliſh*	
1	démonter,		ac.	*to diſmount*	
1	démontrer,		ac.	*to demonſtrate*	(ind. ſubj.)
1	dénier,		ac.	*to deny*	de
1	dénommer,		ac.	*to name*	
1	dénoncer,		ac.	*to inform againſt*	
1	dénoter,		ac.	*to denote*	
1	dénouer,		ac.	*to untie*	
1	dépaqueter,		ac.	*to undo a bundle*	
1	dépaver,		ac.	*to unpave*	
1	dépêcher,		ac.	*to diſpatch*	
1	ſe dépêcher,			*to make haſte*	de

7	dépeindre,		ac.	*to deſcribe*	
10	dépendre,	-	ge. —	*to depend*	
1	dépenſer,		ac.	*to ſpend* -	*à*
1	dépeupler,		ac.	*to depopulate*	
1	déplacer,		ac.	*to diſplace* -	pour
ir.	déplaire,		ac.	*to diſpleaſe*	de
1	déplanter,		ac.	*to diſplant*	
1	déplier,		ac.	*to unfold*	
1	dépliſſer,		ac.	*to unplait*	
1	déplorer,		ac.	*to lament*	
1	déplumer,		ac.	*to take out the feathers*	
2	dépolir,		ac.	*to unpoliſh*	
1	dépoſer,		ac.	*to depoſe* -	•
1	dépoſſéder,		ac.	*to diſpoſſeſs*	
1	dépouiller,	ge.	ac.	*to ſtrip*	
1	dépraver,		ac.	*to deprave*	
1	déprimer,		ac.	*to depreſs*	
1	députer	da.	ac.	*to depute*	
1	déraciner,		ac.	*to root out*	
1	déraiſonner,			*to talk nonſenſe*	
1	déranger,		ac.	*to diſorder*	
1	dérégler,		ac.	*to diſorder*	
1	dériver,	ge.	ac.	*to derive*	
1	dérober,		ac.	*to ſteal*	
1	déroger,	da.	—	*to derogate*	
1	dérouiller,		oc.	*to get out the ruſt*	
1	déſabuſer,		ac.	*to undeceive*	
ir.	déſapprendre,		ac.	*to unlearn* -	*à*
1	déſapprouver,		ac.	*to diſapprove*	
1	déſarmer,		ac.	*to diſarm*	
1	déſavouer,		ac.	*to diſown* (ind. ſubj.)	o
10	déſcendre,		ac.	*to go down*	
1	déſennuyer,		ac.	*to divert*	
1	déſerter,		ac.	*to deſert*	
1	déſeſpérer,		ac.	*to deſpair* -	de
1	déſhabiller,		ac.	*to undreſs*	
1	ſe déſhabituer,	ge.	—	*to break off one's cuſtom*	de
1	déſhonorer,		ac.	*to diſhonour*	
1	déſigner,		ac.	*to appoint*	
1	déſirer,		ac.	*to long for* ſubj.	•
1	ſe déſiſter,	ge.	—	*to give over*	

2	déſobéir,	da.	—	*to diſobey*	
1	déſobliger,		ac.	*to diſpleaſe*	
1	déſoler,		ac.	*to deſolate*	de
1	déſorienter,		ac.	*to put one out*	
1	déſoſſer,		ac.	*to unbone*	
1	ſe déſaiſir,	ge.	—	*to let a thing go*	
1	déſſaler,		ac.	*to unſalt*	
1	deſſécher,		ac.	*to dry up*	
1	deſſeller,		ac.	*to unſaddle*	
3	deſſervir,		ac.	*to clear up*	
1	deſſiner,		ac.	*to ſketch*	
1	deſſouder,		ac.	*to unſolder*	
1	deſtiner,	da.	ac.	*to deſign*	à
2	déſunir,		ac.	*to diſunite*	
1	détacher,		ac.	*to untie*	
7	déteindre,		ac.	*to diſcolour*	
10	détendre,		ac.	*to unbend*	
1	déterminer,		ac.	*to determine*	de
1	ſe déterminer,		da.	*to reſolve upon*	à
1	déteſter,		ac.	*to abhor*	
10	détordre,		ac.	*to untwiſt*	
1	détourner,	ge.	ac.	*to divert*	de
1	détremper,		ac.	*to dilute*	
1	détromper,		ac.	*to undeceive*	
1	détrôner,		ac.	*to dethrone*	
9	détruire,		ac.	*to deſtroy*	
1	dévaliſer,		ac.	*to ſtrip*	
1	dévancer,		ac.	*to out-run*	
1	développer,		ac.	*to unfold*	
4	dévenir,			*to become*	
1	déverouiller,		ac.	*to unbolt*	
1	dévider,		ac.	*to wind into a ſkain*	
1	déviner,		ac.	*to gueſs*	
1	dévoiler,		ac.	*to unveil*	
5	dévoir,	da.	ac.	*to owe*	e
1	dévorer,		ac.	*to devour*	
1	dévouer,	da.	ac.	*to dedicate*	
1	dicter,	da.	ac.	*to dictate*	
1	diffamer,		ac.	*to defame*	
1	différer,		ac.	*to differ*	à or de
1	digérer,		ac.	*to digeſt*	

1	dilater,	ac.	*to dilate*		
1	dîmer,	ac.	*to tithe*		
1	diminuer,		*to decreaſe*		
1	dîner,		*to dine*		
ir.	dire,	da. ac.	*to ſay* -	(ind. ſubj.)	de
1	diriger,	ac.	*to direct*		
1	diſcerner,	ac.	*to diſcern.*		
1	diſcipliner,	ac.	*to diſcipline*		
1	diſcontinuer,	ac.	*to ceaſe* -		de
4	diſconvenir,	ge.	*to diſagree* -		de
ir.	diſcourir,		*to diſcourſe*		
1	diſculper,	ac.	*to juſtify* -		de
1	diſcuter,	ac.	*to diſcuſs*		
1	diſgracier,	ac.	*to turn out of favour*		
7	disjoindre,	ac.	*to disjoin*		
8	diſparoître,		*to vaniſh away*		
1	diſpenſer,	ge. ac.	*to excuſe* -		de
1	diſperſer,	ac.	*to ſcatter*		
1	diſpoſer,	ac.	*to ſet in order* -		à
1	diſputer,		*to quarrel*		
1	diſſéquer,	ac.	*to diſſect*		
1	diſſimuler,	ac.	*to diſſemble*		
1	diſſiper,	ac.	*to diſſipate*		
ir.	diſſoudre,	ac.	*to diſſolve*		
1	diſſuader,	ge. ac.	*to diſſuade* -		de
1	diſtiller,	ac.	*to diſtill*		
1	diſtinguer,	ge. ac.	*to diſcern*		
ir.	diſtraire,	ac.	*to diſtract*		
1	divaguer,		*to ramble*		
2	divertir,	ac.	*to divert* -		à
1	diviſer,	ac.	*to divide*		
1	divulguer,	ac.	*to publiſh*		
1	dogmatiſer,		*to dogmatiſe*		
1	dominer,		*to ſway*		
1	dompter,	ac.	*to ſubdue*		
1	donner,	da. ac.	*to give* -		à
3	dormir,		*to ſleep*		
1	doter,	ac.	*to give a portion*		
1	doubler,	ac.	*to line, to double*		
1	douer,	ac.	*to endow*		
1	douter,	ge.	*to queſtion* -		(ſubj.)

1	dreſſer,	ac.	*to make ſtraight* -	à
2	durcir,	ac.	*to harden*	
1	durer,		*to laſt*	

E

1	éblouir,	ac.	*to dazzle*	
1	ébranler,	ac.	*to ſhake.*	
1	écarter,	ac.	*to drive away*	
1	échanger,	ac.	*to exchange*	
1	échapper,		*to eſcape*	
1	échauffer,	ac.	*to warm*	
1	échouer,		*to run on ſhore*	
1	éclabouſſer,	ac.	*to daſh*	
2	éclaircir,	ac.	*to clear*	
1	éclairer,	ac.	*to light*	
1	éclater,	ac.	*to burſt*	
1	s'éclipſer,		*to diſappear*	
9	éconduire,	ac.	*to refuſe*	
1	écorcher,	ac.	*to ſkin*	
1	s'écouler,		*to flow out*	
1	écouter,	ac.	*to liſten* -	o
1	écraſer,	ac.	*to bruiſe*	
ir.	écrire,	da. ac.	*to write* -	de
1	écrouter,	ac.	*to chip bread*	
1	écumer,		*to foam*	
1	édifier,	ac.	*to edify*	
1	effacer,	ac.	*to blot out*	
1	effectuer,	ac.	*to put in execution*	
1	éffiler,	ac.	*to unravel*	
1	effleurer,	ac.	*to touch ſlightly*	
1	éfforcer,		*to endeavour* - -	de
1	effrayer,	ac.	*to fright* -	de
1	égaler,	ac.	*to equal*	
1	égorger,	ac.	*to cut the throat*	
1	élaguer,	ac.	*to prune*	
1	s'élancer ſur,		*to leap upon*	
2	élargir,	ac.	*to widen*	
1	élever,		*to raiſe, to educate*	
1	élire,	ac.	*to elect*	

1	éloigner,	ac.	*to remove*	-	de
1	embarquer,	ac.	*to embark*		
1	embarraſſer,	ac.	*to perplex*		
1	embaumer,	ac.	*to embalm*		
2	embellir,		*to embelliſh*		
1	embraſer,	ac.	*to ſet on fire*		
1	embraſſer,	ac.	*to embrace*		
1	s'émerveiller,	ge.	*to wonder at*	-	de
1	emmenoter,	ac.	*to manacle*		
1	émonder,	ac.	*to prune*		
ir.	émoudre,	ac.	*to ſharpen*		
1	émouſſer,	ac.	*to blunt*		
ir.	émouvoir,	ac.	*to move*		
1	empailler,	ac.	*to cover with ſtraw*		
1	empaqueter,	ac.	*to pack up*		
1	s'emparer,	ge.	*to ſeize upon*		
1	empêcher,	ac.	*to hinder*	(ſubj.)	de
1	empéſer,	ac.	*to ſtarch*		
2	emplir,	ge. ac.	*to fill up*		
1	employer,	ac.	*to employ*	-	à
1	empoiſonner,	ac.	*to poiſon*		
1	emporter,	ac.	*to carry away*		
1	s'emporter,		*to fall into a paſſion*		
1	s'empreſſer,		*to be eager*	-	de
1	empriſonner,		*to put in jail*		
1	emprunter,	ge. ac.	*to borrow*		
1	encaver,	ac.	*to put in a cellar*		
1	encenſer,	ac.	*to offer incenſe*		
1	enchaîner,	ac.	*to put in chains*		
1	enchanter,	ac.	*to charm*		
2	enchérir,		*to raiſe*		
1	encourager,	ac.	*to encourage*	-	à
ir.	encourir,	ge. ac.	*to incur*		
1	s'endetter,		*to run into debt*		
3	s'endormir,		*to fall aſleep*		
1	endurer,	ac.	*to ſuffer*		
1	enfanter,	ac.	*to bring forth a child*		
1	enfermer,	ac.	*to ſhut in*		
1	enfiler,	ac.	*to thread*		
1	enflammer,	ac.	*to ſet on fire*		
1	enfler,		*to ſwell*		

1	enfoncer,		*to ſink*	
7	enfreindre,	ge. ac.	*to tranſgreſs*	
1	enfumer,		*to ſmoke*	
1	engager,	ac.	*to perſuade* -	à
1	s'engager,	da.	*to take upon one's ſelf*	à
1	engendrer,	ac.	*to beget*	
2	engloutir,	ac.	*to ſwallow*	
1	engraiſſer,	ac.	*to fatten*	
2	s'enhardir,		*to grow bold* -	à
7	enjoindre,	da. ac.	*to order* -	de
1	s'enivrer,		*to make one's ſelf drunk*	
1	enlever,	ac.	*to take away*	
1	s'ennuyer,	ge.	*to be weary* -	de
2	s'enorgueillir,		*to be proud*	
1	s'enraciner,		*to take root*	
1	enrager,		*to enrage*	
1	enregiſtrer,	ac.	*to regiſter*	
1	s'enrhumer,		*to catch á cold*	
2	s'enrichir,		*to grow rich*	
1	enrôler,	ac.	*to enliſt*	
1	enſanglanter,	ac.	*to make bloody*	
1	enſeigner,	da. ac.	*to teach* -	à
1	enſémencer,	ac.	*to ſow*	
2	enſevelir,	ac.	*to bury*	
1	entaſſer,	ac.	*to heap up*	
10	entendre,	ac.	*to hear* -	o
1	enterrer,	ac.	*to bury*	
1	s'entêter,		*to be infatuated*	
1	entraîner,	ac.	*to drag away*	
1	entraver,	ac.	*to fetter*	
1	entrélacer,	ac.	*to intermingle*	
1	entremêler,	ac.	*to intermix*	
1	entrer,		*to get in*	
ir.	s'entremettre,		*to interpoſe*	
ir.	entreprendre,	ac.	*to undertake* -	de
4	entrétenir,	ac.	*to keep*	
4	s'entrétenir avec,		*to diſcourſe with*	
ir.	entrévoir,	ac.	*to have a glimpſe*	
ir.	entrouvrir,	ac.	*to open a little*	
2	envahir,	ge. ac.	*to invade*	
1	envelopper,	ac.	*to fold up*	

1	envenimer,	ac.	*to poiſon*		
1	envier,	ac.	*to envy*		
1	environner,	ac.	*to encompaſs*		
1	enviſager,	ac.	*to look in the face*		
1	s'envoler,		*to fly away*		
ir.	envoyer,	da. ac.	*to ſend*	-	o
2	épaiſſir,	ac.	*to thicken*		
2	s'épanouir,		*to ſpring out*		
1	épargner,	da. ac.	*to ſpare*		
1	épeler,	ac.	*to ſpell*		
1	épicer,	ac.	*to ſpice*		
1	épier,		*to bear*		
1	épier,	ac.	*to ſpy*		
1	épointer,	ac.	*to blunt*		
1	époudrer,	ac.	*to wipe the duſt off*		
1	épouſer,	ac.	*to marry*		
1	épouvanter,	ac.	*to terrify*	-	de
1	éprouver,	ac.	*to try*		
1	épuiſer,	ac.	*to empty*		
1	épurer,	ac.	*to refine*		
1	équiper,	ac.	*to equip*		
ir.	équivaloir,	da.	*to be equal*		
1	ériger,	ac.	*to erect*		
1	érrer,		*to ramble*		
1	eſcalader,	ac.	*to ſcale*		
1	eſcamoter,	ac.	*to ſecure a dice*		
1	eſcarmoucher,		*to ſkirmiſh*		
1	eſcompter,	ac.	*to diſcount*		
1	eſcrimer,		*to fence*		
1	eſcroquer,	ac.	*to ſharp, to trick*		
1	eſpérer,	ae.	*to hope*	(ind. ſubj.)	o
1	eſpionner,	ac.	*to be a ſpy*		
1	s'eſquiver,		*to ſteal away*		
1	eſſayer,	ac.	*to try*	-	de
1	eſſuyer,	ac.	*to wipe off*		
1	eſtimer,	ac.	*to value*	-	de
1	eſtropier,	ac.	*to lame*		
2	établir,	ac.	*to eſtabliſh*		
1	étaler,	ac.	*to diſplay*		
1	étaler,	ac.	*to expoſe to ſale*		
1	étancher,	ac.	*to quench*		

7	éteindre,	ac.	*to extinguiſh*		
10	étendre,	ac.	*to ſpread*		
1	éternuer,		*to ſneeze*		
1	étiquetter,	ac.	*to title*		
1	étonner,	ac.	*to ſurpriſe*	-	de
1	s'étonner,	ge.	*to wonder at*	(ſubj.)	de
1	étouffer,	ac.	*to ſtifle*		
2	étourdir,	ac.	*to ſtun*		
1	étrangler,	ac.	*to ſtifle to death*		
ir.	être,		*to be*	-	à
2	étrécir,	ac.	*to make narrow*		
1	étudier,	ac.	*to ſtudy*		
1	évacuer,	ac.	*to evacuate*		
1	s'évader,		*to ſteal away*		
1	évaluer,	ac.	*to value*		
2	s'évanouir,		*to faint away*		
1	s'évaporer,		*to evaporate*		
1	éveiller,	ac.	*to awake*		
1	éviter,	ac.	*to ſhun*	-	de
1	exagérer,	ac.	*to exaggerate*		
1	exalter,	ac.	*to exalt*		
1	examiner,	ac.	*to inquire into*		
1	exaucer,	ac.	*to grant*		
1	excéder,	ac.	*to exceed*		
1	excepter,	ac.	*to except*		
1	exercer,	da. ac.	*to exerciſe*	-	à
1	exciter,	da. ac.	*to incite*	-	à
ir.	exclure,	ge. ac.	*to exclude*		
1	excommunier,	ac.	*to excommunicate*		
1	excuſer,	ac.	*to excuſe*	-	de
1	exempter,	ge. da.	*to exempt*	-	de
1	executer,	ge. ac.	*to execute*		
1	exercer,	ac.	*to exerciſe*		
1	exhorter,	da. ac.	*to exhort*	-	à
1	exiger,	ge. ac.	*to require*	(ſubj.)	de
1	exiler,	ac.	*to baniſh*		
1	exiſter,		*to exiſt*		
1	s'expatrier,		*to quit one's own country*		
1	expédier,	ac.	*to diſpatch*		
1	expier,	ac.	*to atone*		
1	expirer,		*to expire, to die*		

1	expliquer,	da. ac.	*to explain*	
1	expoſer,	ac.	*to expoſe*	
1	exprimer,	ac.	*to expreſs*	
1	expulſer,	ge. ac.	*to turn out*	
1	exterminer,	ac.	*te exterminate*	
1	extirper,	ac.	*to root out*	
ir.	extraire,	ge. ac.	*to extract*	

F

1	Fabriquer,	ac.	*to manufacture*	
1	fâcher,	ac.	*to vex* -	(ſubj.) de
1	ſe fâcher,		*to be angry*	(ſubj.) de
1	faciliter,	da. ac.	*to facilitate*	
1	façonner,	ac.	*to faſhion*	
6	faire,	ac,	*to make,* or *to do*	o
imp.	falloir,		*to be neceſſary* -	o
1	falſifier,	ac.	*to counterfeit*	
1	ſe familiariſer,		*to grow familiar*	
2	farcir,	ac.	*to ſtuff*	
1	ſe farder,		*to paint*	
1	fatiguer,	ac.	*to tire*	
1	favoriſer,	ac.	*to favour*	
7	feindre,	ac.	*to diſſemble* - -	de
10	fendre,	ac.	*to ſplit,* or *cleave*	
1	fermenter,		*to ferment*	
1	fermer,	ac.	*to ſhut up*	
1	ferrer un cheval,		*to ſhoe a horſe*	
1	ſe fier,	da.	*to truſt to*	(ind. ſubj.)
1	ſe figer,		*to congeal*	
1	figurer,	ac.	*to repreſent*	
1	ſe figurer,	ac.	*to fancy* -	o
1	filer,	ac.	*to ſpin*	
1	filtrer,	ac.	*to filtrate*	
2	finir,	ac.	*to make an end* -	de
1	flamber,		*to blaze*	
1	ſe flatter,	ge.	*to flatter one's ſelf*	de
2	fléchir,	ge. ac.	*to ſoften*	
2	flétrir,		*to fade away*	
2	fleurir,		*to bloom*	
1	flotter,		*to float*	

1	fomenter,	ac.	*to foment*	
10	ſe fondre,		*to melt*	
1	forcer,	da. ac.	*to compel*	
1	forger,	ac.	*to hammer*	
1	ſe formaliſer,	ge.	*to find fault*	- de
1	former,	ac.	*to form*	
1	fortifier,	ac.	*to ſtrengthen*	
1	foudroyer,	ac.	*to ſtorm*	
1	fouetter,	ac.	*to whip*	
1	fouler aux pieds,	ac.	*to trample upon*	
2	fournir,	da. ac.	*to furniſh*	- à *or* de
1	frapper,	ac.	*to ſtrike*	
2	frémir		*to tremble*	- de
1	fréquenter,	ac.	*to haunt*	
1	friſer,	ac.	*to curl*	
1	friſonner,		*to ſhiver*	
2	ſe froidir,		*to grow cold*	
1	froiſſer,	ac.	*to bruiſe*	
1	frotter,	ac.	*to rub*	
1	fruſtrer,	ge. ac.	*to diſappoint*	
ir.	fuir,	ge. ac.	*to ſhun*	
1	fumer,	ac.	*to ſmoke*	

G

1	Gager,	ac.	*to lay wagers*	(ind. ſubj.)
1	gagner,	ac.	*to win*	
1	galoper,		*to gallop*	
1	ſe gangréner,		*to gangrene*	
1	garder,	ac.	*to keep*	
2	garnir,	ac.	*to furniſh*	
1	garrotter,	ac.	*to tie faſt*	
1	gâter,	ac.	*to ſpoil*	
1	geler,		*to freeze*	
2	gémir,		*to groan*	
1	geſticuler,		*to be full of action*	
1	glacer,		*to freeze*	
1	glaner,		*to glean*	
1	gliſſer,		*to ſlide*	
1	ſe gliſſer,		*to creep in*	
1	goûter,	ac.	*to taſte*	

1	gouverner,	ac.	*to rule*	
2	grandir,		*to grow tall*	
1	gratter,	ac.	*to ſcratch*	
1	graver,	ac.	*to engrave*	
1	grêler,		*to hail*	
1	griller,	ac.	*to broil*	
1	griller,	ac.	*to grate up*	
1	grincer des dents,		*to gnaſh the teeth*	
1	gronder,	ge. ac.	*to ſcold at*	de
2	ſe groſſir,		*to grow big*	
2	guérir,	ac.	*to cure*	
2	ſe guérir,		*to recover*	
1	guider,	da. ac.	*to guide*	

H

1	Habiller,	ac.	*to clothe, to dreſs*	
1	s'habiller,		*to dreſs one's ſelf*	pour
1	habiter,	ac.	*to live in*	
1	s'habituer,	da.	*to get an habit*	à
ir.	haïr,	ac.	*to hate*	de
1	haranguer,	ac.	*to make a ſpeech*	
1	hazarder,	ac.	*to venture*	
1	ſe hâter,		*to make haſte*	de
1	hériter,	ge.	*to inherit*	
1	héſiter,		*to heſitate*	à
1	honorer,	ac.	*to honour*	
1	humilier,	ac.	*to humble*	

I

1	Jardiner,		*to dreſs a garden*	
1	idolâtrer,		*to worſhip idols*	
1	jetter,	ac.	*to throw*	
1	jeûner,		*to faſt*	

N. B. When the verbs are taken in a different ſenſe, they govern different *caſes* and *prepoſitions*; as I could not put them all without confuſion, I have only mentioned thoſe which they govern more frequently.

1	ignorer,	ac.	*to be ignorant* -	(ſubj.)	
1	illuminer,		*to illuminate*		
1	s'imaginer,	ac.	*to fancy*	(ind. ſubj.)	o
1	imbiber,	ac.	*to imbibe*		
1	s'immiſcer,	ac.	*to intermeddle*		
1	immoler,	da. ac.	*to ſacrifice*		
1	immortaliſer,	ac.	*to immortaliſe*		
1	impatienter,	ac.	*to tire out one's patience*		
1	implorer,	ge. ac.	*to implore*		
1	importuner,	ac.	*to be troubleſome*		
1	impoſer,	da. ac.	*to lay on* -		de
1	imprimer,	ac.	*to print*		
1	imputer,	da. ac.	*to impute* -		de
1	incliner,	da.	*to incline* -		à
1	incommoder,	ac.	*to diſturb*		
1	incorporer,	ac.	*to incorporate*		
1	inculquer,	ac.	*to inculcate*		
1	indemniſer,	ge. ac.	*to indemnify*		
1	indiquer,	da. ac.	*to ſhew*		
1	indiſpoſer,	ac.	*to alienate* -		à
1	infecter,	ac.	*to infect*		
1	infeſter,	ac.	*to infeſt*		
1	influencer,	ge. ac.	*to influence*		
1	informer,	ge. ac.	*to inform*		
1	infuſer,		*to infuſe*		
1	s'ingérer,		*to intermeddle with*		à
1	inhumer,	ac.	*to bury*		
1	injurier,	ac.	*to abuſe*		
1	innover,	ac.	*to innovate*		
1	inonder,	ac.	*to overflow*		
1	inquiéter,	ac.	*to trouble*		
ir.	inſcrire,	ac.	*to inſcribe* -		pour
1	s'inſinuer,		*to ſteal in*		
1	inſinuer,	ac.	*to inſinuate* -		de
1	inſpirer, -	da. ac.	*to inſpire with* -		de
1	inſtituer,	ac.	*to appoint*		
9	inſtruire,	ac.	*to teach*		
1	inſulter,	ge. da.	*to inſult*		
1	intercéder,		*to intercede* -		pour
1	intercepter,	ac.	*to intercept*		
ir.	interdire,	da. ac.	*to interdict*		

1	s'interpoſer,		*to intermeddle*	
1	interpréter,	ge. ac.	*to explain*	
1	interroger,	ac.	*to aſk queſtions*	
10	interrompre,	ac.	*to interrupt*	
4	intervenir,		*to intervene*	
1	intimider,	ac.	*to fright*	
1	intituler,	ac.	*to intitle*	
1	intriguer,		*to cabal*	pour
9	introduire,	ac.	*to introduce*	à
1	invectiver contre,		*to inveigh againſt*	
1	inventer,	ac.	*to find out*	pour
2	inveſtir,	ge. ac.	*to inveſt*	
1	inviter,	ac.	*to invite*	à
1	invoquer,	ac.	*to invoke*	
7	joindre,	ac.	*to join*	
1	jouer,	ge. da. ac.	*to play*	à
2	jouir,	ge.	*to enjoy*	
1	irriter,	ac.	*to exaſperate*	
1	juger,	ac.	*to judge*	(ind. ſubj.)
1	jurer,	da. ac.	*to ſwear,*	(ind. ſubj.) de
1	juſtifier,	ac.	*to juſtify*	de

L

1	Labourer,	ac.	*to plough*	pour
1	lacer,	ac.	*to lace*	
1	lâcher,	ac.	*to looſen*	
1	laiſſer,	ac.	*to leave*	o
1	lambriſſer,	ac.	*to wainſcot*	
1	lamenter,	ge. ac.	*to bemoan*	
1	lancer,	ac.	*to fling*	
2	languir,		*to languiſh*	
1	larder,	ac.	*to lard*	
1	laſſer,	ac.	*to weary*	de
1	laver,	ac.	*to waſh*	
1	légitimer,	ac.	*to legitimate*	
1	léguer,	ac.	*to leave by will*	
1	ſe lever,		*to riſe*	
1	lier,	ac.	*to tie*	
1	ſe liguer contre,		*to enter into a league*	
1	limer,	ac.	*to file off*	

1	limiter,	ac.	*to limit*	
1	liguefier,	ac.	*to liquefy*	
ir.	lire,	ac.	*to read*	pour
1	livrer,	da. ac.	*to deliver*	
1	loger,	ac.	*to lodge, to dwell*	
1	loucher,		*to ſquint*	
1	louer,	ge. ac.	*to praiſe*	de
9	luire,		*to ſhine*	
1	luter contre,		*to ſtruggle with*	
1	luter,		*to wreſtle*	

M

1	Mâcher,	ac.	*to ſhew*	
1	maçonner,	ac.	*to build*	
2	maigrir,	ac.	*to grow lean*	
4	maintenir,	ac.	*to maintain*	(ind. ſubj.)
1	maitrîſer,	ac.	*to ſubdue*	
1	maltraiter,	ac.	*to uſe ill*	pour
1	mander,	da. ac.	*to ſend for*	de
1	manger,	ac.	*to eat*	pour
1	manier,	ac.	*to handle*	
1	manifeſter,	da. ac.	*to reveal*	
1	manquer,	ac.	*to miſs*	de
1	manquer,	ge.	*to want*	à *or* de
1	marchander,	ac.	*to cheapen*	
1	marcher,		*to walk*	
1	marier,	ac.	*to marry*	
1	ſe marier,		*to marry*	
1	mariner,	ac.	*to pickle*	
1	marquer,	ac.	*to mark*	
1	maſſacrer,	ac.	*to maſſacre*	
ir.	maudire,	ac.	*to curſe*	
8	ſe méconnoître,		*to forget one's ſelf*	
8	méconnoître,	ac.	*to take for another*	
ir.	médire,	ge.	*to ſlander*	
1	méditer,	ac.	*to meditate*	de
1	ſe méfier,	ge.	*to diſtruſt*	
1	mélanger,	ac.	*to mix together*	
1	mêler,	ac.	*to mix*	
1	ſe mêler,	ge.	*to meddle with*	de

1	mênacer,	ge. ac.	*to threaten*	-	de
1	ménager,	ac.	*to ſpare*		
3	mentir,		*to tell lies*		
ir.	ſe meprendre,		*to miſtake*		
1	mépriſer,	ac.	*to deſpiſe*		
1	mériter,	ac.	*to deſerve*	-	de
1	méſurer,	ac.	*to meaſure*		
1	métamorphoſer,	ac.	*to metamorphoſe*		
ir.	mettre,	ac.	*to put*	-	à
1	meubler,	ac.	*to furniſh*		
2	meurtrir,	ac.	*to bruiſe*		
1	miauler,		*to mew*		
1	modérer,	ac.	*to moderate*		
1	moiſſonner,	ac.	*to harveſt*		
1	moleſter,	ac.	*to grieve*		
1	monter,		*to get up*		
1	montrer,	da. ac.	*to ſhew*	-	à
1	ſe moquer,	ge.	*to laugh at*		
1	moraliſer,		*to moraliſe*		
10	mordre,	ac.	*to bite*		
1	moucheter,	ac.	*to ſpot*		
ir.	moudre,	ac.	*to grind*		
ir.	mourir,		*to die*		
1	murer,	ac.	*to wall up*		
2	mûrir,		*to ripen*		
1	murmurer,		*to mutter*		

N

1	Nager,		*to ſwim*		
ir.	naître,		*to be born*	-	pour
1	néceſſiter,	da. ac.	*to compel*	-	à
1	négliger,	ac.	*to neglect*	-	de
1	négocier,		*to trade*		
imp.	neiger,		*to ſnow*		
1	néttoyer,	ac.	*to clean*		
1	nier	ac.	*to deny*	-	(ſubj.) o
2	noircir,	ac.	*to blacken*		
1	nommer,	ac.	*to name*		
1	noter,	ac.	*to note*		
1	notifier,	da. ac.	*to let one know*	-	de
1	nouer,	ac.	*to tie*		

2	nourrir,	ac.	*to feed*	-	à
1	noyer,	ac.	*to drown*		
1	ſe noyer,		*to be drowned*		
1	nuancer,	ac.	*to ſhadow*		
9	nuire,	da.	*to hurt*		

O

2	Obéir,	da.	*to obey*		
1	objecter,	da. ac.	*to object*		
1	obliger,	ac.	*to oblige*	-	de *or* à
2	obſcurcir,	ac.	*to darken*		
1	obſéder,	ac.	*to beſet*		
1	obſerver,	ac.	*to obſerve*	-	o
1	s'obſtiner,	da.	*to be obſtinate*	-	à
4	obtenir,	ge. ac.	*to obtain*	-	de
1	obvier,	da.	*to obviate*		
1	occuper,	ac.	*to employ*	-	à
1	offenſer,	ac.	*to offend*		
ir.	offrir,	da. ac.	*to offer*	-	de
1	offuſquer,	ac.	*to dim*		
1	ombrager,	ac.	*to ſhadow*		
ir.	omettre,	ac.	*to omit*	-	de
1	opiner,		*to vote*	-	pour
1	s'opiniatrer,		*to be obſtinate*	-	à
1	s'oppoſer,	da.	*to be againſt*		
1	opprimer,	ac.	*to oppreſs*		
1	opter,		*to chuſe*		
1	ordonner,	da. ac.	*to order*		(ſubj.) de
1	orner,	ac.	*to adorn*		
1	orthographier,		*to ſpell*		
1	ôſer,	ac.	*to dare*	-	o
1	ôter,	ac.	*to take away*		
1	oublier,	ac.	*to forget*	-	de
2	ourdir,	ac.	*to weave*		
1	outrager,	ac.	*to affront*		
ir.	ouvrir,	ac.	*to open*	-	pour

P

1	Pacifier,	ac.	*to pacify*		
ir.	paître,	ac.	*to graze*	-	pour

1	pallier,	ac.	*to palliate*		
1	panſer une plaie,		*to dreſs a wound*		
1	paraphraſer,	ac.	*to comment upon*		
ir.	parcourir,	ac.	*to run over*		
1	pardonner,	da. ac.	*to forgive*	-	de
1	parier,	ac.	*to bet*		
1	parler,	da.	*to ſpeak*	-	de
8	paroître,		*to appear*	-	o
1	parquer,	ac.	*to fold*		
1	parſémer,		*to ſtrew*		
1	partager,	ac.	*to ſhare*		
3	partir,		*to ſet out*	-	pour
4	parvenir,	da.	*to arrive at*	-	à
1	paſſer,	ac.	*to paſs*	-	pour
1	patienter,		*to take patience*		
1	patiner,		*to ſkait*		
1	paver,	ac.	*to pave*		
1	payer,	da. ac.	*to pay*		
1	pécher,		*to ſin*		
1	pêcher,	ac.	*to fiſh*		
7	peindre,	ac.	*to paint*		
1	peler,	ac.	*to peel*		
1	pencher ſur,		*to lean upon*		
10	pendre,		*to hang*	-	pour
1	pénétrer dans,		*to get into*		
1	penſer,	da.	*to think of*	(ind. ſubj.)	à
1	percer,	ac.	*to pierce*		
10	perdre	ac.	*to loſe*	-	à
ir.	permettre,	da. ac.	*to permit*	(ſubj.)	de
1	perſiſter,		*to perſiſt*	-	à
1	perſuader,	da. ac.	*to perſuade*	-	de
2	pervertir,	ac.	*to pervert*		
1	péſer,	ac.	*to weigh*		
1	pétrifier,	ac.	*to petrify*		
1	peupler,	ac.	*to people*		
1	piler,	ac.	*to bruiſe*		
1	piller,	ac.	*to plunder*		
1	pincer,	ac.	*to pinch*		
1	piquer,	ac.	*to prick*		

1	ſe piquer,	ge.	*to pretend to*	-	de
1	placer,	ac.	*to place*	-	pour
7	plaindre,	ac.	*to pity*	-	de
7	ſe plaindre,	ge.	*to complain*	(ſub).	de
ir.	plaire,	da.	*to pleaſe*	-	à
1	planter,	ac.	*to plant*		
1	plâtrer,	ac.	*to plaſter*		
1	pleurer,		*to cry*		
imp.	pleuvoir,		*to rain*		
1	plier,	ac.	*to plait, to bend*		
1	pliſſer,	ac.	*to plait*		
1	plomber,	ac.	*to lead*		
1	plonger,	ac.	*to plunge*		
1	ployer,	ac.	*to fold up*		
1	poignarder,	ac.	*to ſtab*		
1	poivrer,	ac.	*to pepper*		
1	poliſſer,	ac.	*to poliſh*		
2	polir,	ac.	*to burniſh*		
1	pomper,	ac.	*to pump*	-	pour
1	ponctuer,	ac.	*to point*		
10	pondre,	ac.	*to lay eggs*		
1	porter,	da. ac.	*to carry*	-	à
1	poſer,	ac.	*to lay*		
1	poſſéder,	ac.	*to poſſeſs*		
1	poudrer,	ac.	*to powder*		
ir.	pourſuivre,	ac.	*to purſue,*		
ir.	pourvoir,	da.	*to provide*		
1	pouſſer,	ac.	*to truſt, puſh*	-	à
ir.	pouvoir,	da.	*to be able*	-	o
1	pratiquer,	ac.	*to practiſe*		
1	précéder,	ac.	*to precede*		
1	prêcher,	ac.	*to preach*	-	de
ir.	prédire,	da. ac.	*to foretell*	(ind. ſubj.)	o
1	prédominer,	ac.	*to predominate*		
1	préférer,	da. ac.	*to prefer*	-	o
1	préjudicier,	ac.	*to prejudice*		
1	prélever,	ac.	*to deduct*		
1	préméditer,	ac.	*to premeditate*		
ir.	prendre,	ac.	*to take*	-	de
1	préparer,	ac.	*to prepare*	-	à
1	prépoſer,	da. ac.	*to ſet over*		

1	préſager,	ac.	*to portend*		
ir.	preſcrire,	da. ac.	*to preſcribe*	-	de
1	préſenter,	ac.	*to offer*	-	à
1	préſerver,	ac.	*to preſerve*		
1	préſider,	da.	*to preſide*		
1	préſenter,	ac.	*to preſent*	-	à
3	préſentir,	ac.	*to foreſee*		
1	preſſer,	ac.	*to preſs* or *ſqueeze*		de
1	préſumer,	ac.	*to preſume*	-	de
10	prétendre,	da.	*to pretend to*	-	o
1	prêter,	da. ac.	*to lend*		
ir.	prévaloir,		*to prevail*		
4	prévenir,	ac.	*to prevent*		
ir.	prévoir,	ac.	*to foreſee*	(ind. ſubj)	o
1	prier,	ge. ac.	*to pray*	(ſubj.)	de
1	priver,	ge. ac.	*to deprive*		
1	procéder,	da.	*to proceed*	-	à
1	proclamer,	ac.	*to proclaim*		
1	procurer,	da. ac.	*to procure*	-	de
1	prodiguer,	ac.	*to laviſh*		
9	produire,	ac.	*to produce*		
1	profaner,	ac.	*to profane*		
1	proférer,	ac.	*to utter*		
1	profeſſer,	ac.	*to profeſs*	-	o *or* de
1	profitter,		*to improve*		
1	projetter,	ac.	*to intend*	-	de
1	prolonger,	ac.	*to prolong*		
1	ſe promener,	ac.	*to walk*		
ir.	promettre,	da. ac.	*to promiſe*	(ind. ſubj.)	de
1	prononcer,	ac.	*to pronounce*		
1	propager,	ac.	*to propagate*		
1	prophétiſer,	ac.	*to foretel*		
1	propoſer,	da. ac.	*to propoſe*	-	de
ir.	proſcrire,	ac.	*to proſcribe*		
1	proſpérer,		*to proſper*		
1	ſe proſterner,		*to proſtrate one's ſelf*		
1	protéger,	ac.	*to protect*		
1	proteſter contre,		*to proteſt*		
4	provenir,	ge.	*to proceed*		
1	publier,	ac.	*to publiſh*	(ind. ſubj.)	o
1	purger,	ac.	*to purge*	-	pour

1	purifier,	ac.	*to purify*
1	ſe putréfier,		*to rot*

Q

1	Qualifier,	ac.	*to qualify*
1	quêreller,	ac.	*to ſcold at*
1	quêſter,	ac.	*to beg, to requeſt*

R

1	Rabaiſſer,	ac.	*to abate*
1	racommoder,	ac.	*to mend*
1	racheter,	ac.	*to redeem*
1	racheter,	ac.	*to buy again*
1	raconter,	da. ac.	*to relate*
2	ſe radoucir,		*to be appeaſed*
2	raffermir,	ac.	*to ſtrengthen*
1	rafiner,	ac.	*to refine*
2	rafraîchir,	ac.	*to cool*
1	raiſonner,		*to reaſon*
2	ralentir,	ac.	*to relent*
1	rallier,	ac.	*to rally*
1	rallumer,	ac.	*to kindle again*
1	ramaſſer,	ac.	*to gather*
1	ramener,	da. ac.	*to bring back*
2	ramollir,		*to ſoften*
1	ramper,		*to crawl*
1	rançonner,	ac.	*to ranſom*
1	ranger,	ac.	*to ſet in order*
1	ranimer,	ac.	*to revive*
1	râper,	ac.	*to grate*
1	rappeler,	da. ac.	*to call again*
1	rapporter,	da. ac.	*to bring back*
ir.	rapprendre,	ac.	*to learn again*
1	rapprocher,	ac.	*to draw near again*
1	raréfier,	ac.	*to rarefy*
1	raſer,	ac.	*to ſhave*
1	raſſaſier,	ac.	*to ſatisfy*
1	raſſembler,	ac.	*to join together*
1	raſſurer	ac.	*to encourage*

1	ratifier,	ac.	*to ratify*	
1	ratiſſer,	ac.	*to ſcrape*	
1	rattacher,	ac.	*to tie again*	
1	raturer,	ac.	*to ſcratch out*	
1	ravager,	ac.	*to lay waſte*	
2	ravir,	ac.	*to raviſh*	
1	rayer,	ac.	*to bar*	
1	réaliſer,	ac.	*to realize*	
1	réaſſigner,	ac.	*to aſſign anew*	
2	rebâtir,	ac.	*to rebuild*	
1	rebaptiſer,	ac.	*to rebaptize*	
2	reblanchir,	ac.	*to waſh again*	
2	rebondir,		*to rebound*	
1	reborder,	ac.	*to new border*	
1	reboucher,	ac.	*to ſtop again*	
1	rebrider,	ac.	*to bridle again*	
1	rebuter,	ac.	*to reject*	
1	recacheter,	ac.	*to ſeal up again*	
1	recéler,	ac.	*to conceal*	
5	recevoir,	ge. ac.	*to receive*	de
1	rechanger,	ac.	*to change again*	
1	recharger,	ac.	*to load again*	
1	réchauffer,	ac.	*to warm again*	
1	rechercher,	ac.	*to ſeek again*	à
1	réciter,	ac.	*to rehearſe*	
1	réclamer,	ac.	*to claim*	
1	récoller,	ac.	*to glue again*	
1	recommander,	da. ac.	*to recommend*	de
1	récompenſer,	ac.	*to reward*	de
1	récompoſer,	ac.	*to compoſe again*	
1	réconcilier,	ac.	*to reconcile*	
9	reconduire,	ac.	*to wait upon one back*	
8	reconnoître,	ac.	*to know again*	o
8	ſe reconnoître,		*to come to one's ſelf*	
ir.	réconquérir,	ac.	*to reconquer*	
1	reconter,	ac.	*to tell over again*	
1	recopier,	ac.	*to write fair again*	
ir.	recoudre,	ac.	*to ſew again*	
ir.	recourir,	da.	*to have recourſe*	
1	récouvrer,		*to recover*	
1	récréer,	ac.	*to recreate*	

1	ſe récrier,		*to exclaim*	
1	récriminer,		*to recriminate*	
ir.	récrire,	da. ac.	*to write over* -	de
1	récruter,	ac.	*to recruit*	
1	réctifier,	ac.	*to rectify*	
ir.	recueillir,	ac.	*to gather* -	
1	reculer,		*to draw back*	
1	recuſer,	ac.	*to except againſt*	
6	redefaire,	ac.	*to undo again*	
1	redemander,	da. ac.	*to aſk again* -	à
10	redeſcendre,		*to come down again*	
5	redevoir,	da. ac.	*to owe ſtill* -	o
1	rédiger,	ac.	*to put in order*	
ir.	redire,	da. ac.	*to ſay again*	de
1	redonner,	da. ac.	*to give again*	
1	rédonder,		*to be ſuperfluous*	
1	redorer,	ac.	*to new gild*	
1	redoubler,	ac.	*to new line*	
1	redoubler,		*to redouble* -	de
1	redouter,	ac.	*to dread* -	de
1	redreſſer,	ac.	*to make ſtraight*	
9	reduire,	da. ae.	*to reduce* -	à
1	reédifier,	ac.	*to build up again*	
6	refaire,	ac.	*to do over again*	
1	référer,	ac.	*to refer*	
2	réfléchir ſur,		*to reflect*	
1	refluer,		*to run back*	
10	refondre,	ac.	*to melt again*	
1	réformer,	ac.	*to reform*	
1	refortifier,	ac.	*to new fortify*	
1	réfréner,	ac.	*to refrain*	
2	réfroidir,	ac.	*to cool*	
1	ſe réfugier,	ac.	*to take ſanctuary*	
1	réfuſer,	da. ac.	*to refuſe* -	de
1	réfuter,	ac.	*to refute*	
1	regagner,	ac.	*to get again*	
1	régaler,	ac.	*to entertain*	
1	régarder,	ac.	*to look upon* -	o
2	regarnir,	ac.	*to furniſh again*	
imp.	regeler,		*to freeze again*	
1	régénérer,	ac.	*to regenerate*	

2	régir,	ac.	*to govern*		
1	régler,	ac.	*to rule*	-	de
1	régner,		*to reign*		
1	régorger,		*to overflow*		
1	regrater,	ac.	*to ſcratch again*		
1	regretter,	ge. ac.	*to lament*	-	de
1	réhabiliter,	ac.	*to rehabilitate*		
1	rehauſſer,		*to raiſe*		
1	rejaillir,		*to ſpurt up*		
1	rejetter,	ge. ac.	*to reject*	-	de
1	réintégrer,	ac.	*to reſtore*		
7	rejoindre,	ac.	*to join again*		
2	ſe rejouir,	ge.	*to rejoice*	(ſubj.)	de
1	réiterer,	ac.	*to repeat*		
1	relâcher,	ac.	*to ſlacken*		
2	rélargir,	ac.	*to make wider again*		
1	relaver,	ac.	*to waſh again*		
1	reléguer,	ac.	*to baniſh*		
1	relever,	ac.	*to raiſe up again*		
1	relier,	ac.	*to bind*		
ir.	rélire,	ac.	*to read over*	-	pour
9	reluire,		*to glitter*		
1	remander, -	da. ac.	*to ſend word again*		de
1	remarier,	ac.	*to marry again*		
1	remarquer,	ac.	*to obſerve*		
1	remballer,	ac.	*to pack up again*		
1	rembarquer,	ac.	*to embark again*	-	pour
1	rembourſer,	ac.	*to reimburſe*		
1	remêler,	ac.	*to ſhuffle again*		
1	remener,	ac.	*to carry back*	-	o
1	rémercier,	ge. ac.	*to thank*	-	de
1	reméſurer,	ac.	*to meaſure again*		
1	remédier,	da.	*to remedy*		
ir.	remettre,	da. ac.	*to put again*		
1	remeubler,	ac.	*to furniſh again*		
1	remonter,		*to get up again*		
1	remontrer,	da. ac.	*to remonſtrate*		
ir.	remoudre,	ac.	*to grind again*		
1	rempaqueter,	ac.	*to pack up again*		
1	replacer,	ac.	*to replace*		
2	remplir,	ac.	*to fill up*		

1	ſe remplumer,		*to new feather*		
1	remporter,	ac.	*to carry back*		
1	remprunter,	ac.	*to borrow again*		
1	remuer,	ac.	*to move*		
ir.	renaître,		*to be born again*		
1	renchaîner,	ac.	*to chain up again*		
2	renchérir,		*to raiſe*		
1	rencontrer,	ac.	*to meet with*		
3	ſe rendormir,		*to fall aſleep again*		
10	rendre,	da. ac.	*to return*	-	à
9	renduire,	ac.	*to new plaſter*		
1	renfermer,	ac.	*to ſhut up again*		
1	renfler,		*to ſwell again*		
1	renforcer,	ac.	*to fortify*		
1	rengaîner,	ac.	*to ſheath*		
1	renier,	ac.	*to diſown*	-	o
1	renoncer,	da.	*to renounce*	-	à
1	renouer,	ac.	*to tie again*		
1	renouveller,	ac.	*to renew*		
1	renter,	ac.	*to endow*		
1	rentrer,		*to come in again*		
1	renverſer,	ac.	*to throw down*		
ir.	renvoyer,	da. ac.	*to ſend back*	-	o
10	répandre,	ac.	*to ſpill, to ſpread*		
1	réparer,	ac.	*to repair*		
8	reparoître,		*to appear again*		
3	répartir,	ac.	*to divide again*		
2	répartir,		*to reply*		
3	repartir,		*to go back again*		
1	repaſſer,	ac.	*to iron*		
1	repaſſer,	ac.	*to croſs again*		
1	repenſer,	da.	*to remind*	-	à
3	ſe repentir,	ge.	*to repent*	-	de
1	répeter,	de. ac.	*to repeat*		
1	repeupler,	ac.	*to repeople*		
1	replacer,	ac.	*to place again*		
1	replanter,	ac.	*to plant again*		
1	replier,	ac.	*to fold again*		
1	répliquer,	da. ac.	*to reply*		
1	repliſſer,	ac.	*to plait again*		
1	replonger,	ac.	*to dip again*		

2	repolir,	ac.	*to poliſh again*		
10	répondre,	ac.	*to anſwer*	(ind. ſubj.)	
1	reporter,	da. ac.	*to carry back*		
1	ſe repoſer,		*to reſt*		
1	repouſſer,	ac.	*to drive back*		
ir.	reprendre,	ac.	*to take again*	-	de
1	repréſenter,	da. ac.	*to repreſent*		
1	réprimander,	ac.	*to rebuke*	-	de
1	réprimer,	ge. ac.	*to repreſs*		
1	reprocher,	da. ac.	*to reproach*	-	de
9	reproduire,	ac.	*to reproduce*		
1	répudier,	ac.	*to divorce*		
1	répugner,	da.	*to repugn*	-	de
1	repurger,	ac.	*to purge again*		
1	réputer,	ac.	*to repute*	-	de
1	réſerver,	ac.	*to reſerve*		
1	réſigner,	da. ac.	*to reſign*		
1	réſilier,	ac.	*to cancel*		
1	réſiſter,	da.	*to reſiſt*		
ir.	réſoudre,	ac.	*to reſolve*	-	de
ir.	ſe réſoudre,	da.	*to reſolve upon*	-	de
1	reſpecter,	ac.	*to reſpect*		
1	reſpirer,		*to breathe*		
1	reſſember,	da.	*to reſemble*		
3	reſſentir,	ac.	*to feel*		
1	reſſerrer,	ac.	*to tie tighter*		
4	ſe reſſouvenir,	ge.	*to remember*	-	de
1	reſſuſciter,		*to raiſe from the dead*		
1	reſtaurer,	ac.	*to reſtore*		
1	reſter,		*to ſtop*	-	à
1	reſtituer,	da. ac.	*to return*		
7	reſteindre,	ac.	*to limit*	-	à
1	réſulter,	ge.	*to reſult from*		
1	reſumer,	ac.	*to recapitulate*		
2	rétablir,	ac.	*to re-eſtabliſh*		
1	retarder,	ac.	*to put off*	-	de
4	retenir,	ac.	*to detain*	-	de
1	retirer,	ac.	*to draw*		
1	ſe retirer,	ge.	*to withdraw*		
1	retomber,		*to fall again*		
10	retordre,	ac.	*to twiſt again*		

1	retoucher,	ac.	*to reviſe again*		
1	retourner,		*to return*	-	o
1	retracer,	ac.	*to draw again*		
1	ſe retracter	ge.	*to recant*	-	de
1	retrancher,	ac.	*to diminiſh*		
1	ſe retrancher,		*to intrench*		
2	rétrécir,	ac.	*to make narrow*		
1	rétrocéder,	ac.	*to make over again*		
1	rétrograder,		*to retrograde*		
1	retrouver,	ac.	*to find again*		
1	réveiller,	ac.	*to awake*		
1	révéler,	da. ac.	*to reveal*		
1	révendiquer,	ac.	*to claim*		
10	revendre,	ac.	*to ſell again*		
4	revenir,		*to come again*	-	o
1	rêver,		*to dream*	-	o
1	réverbérer,	ac.	*to reflect*		
1	révérer,	ac.	*to honour*		
ir.	revêtir,	ge. ac.	*to inveſt*		
ir.	revivre,		*to revive*		
2	réunir,	da. ac.	*to re-unite*		
ir.	revoir,	ac.	*to ſee again*		
1	ſe révolter,		*to revolt*		
1	révoquer,	ac.	*to repeal*		
2	réuſſir,		*to ſucceed*	-	à
1	rider,		*to wrinkle*		
1	ridiculiſer,	ac.	*to laugh at*	-	de
1	rimer,	ac.	*to rhyme*		
1	réimprimer,	ac.	*to reprint*		
1	ripoſter,	da. ac.	*to reply*		
ir.	rire,	ge.	*to laugh*		
1	riſquer,	ac.	*to venture*	-	o *or* de
1	riſſoler,	ac.	*to roaſt brown*		
1	river,	ac.	*to rivet*		
1	rogner,	ac.	*to cut, to pare*		
2	ſe roidir,		*to be ſtiff*		
10	rompre,	ac.	*to break*		
1	ronfler,		*to ſnore*		
1	ronger,	ac.	*to gnaw*		
2	rôtir,	ac.	*to roaſt*		
2	rougir,		*to bluſh, to redden*		de

1	rouler,	ac.	*to roll*	
2	rouſſir,		*to grow red*	
ir.	rouvrir,	ac.	*to open again*	
1	ruiner,	ac.	*to ruin*	

S

1	Sabler,	ac.	*to gravel*	
1	ſâbrer,	ac.	*to cut with a hanger*	
1	ſaccager,	ac.	*to plunder*	
1	ſacrer,	ac.	*to conſecrate*	
1	ſacrifier,	da. ac.	*to ſacrifice*	
1	ſaigner,	ac.	*to let blood*	
2	ſe ſaiſir,	ge.	*to lay hold of*	
2	ſalir,	ac.	*to ſoul*	
1	ſaluer,	ac.	*to ſalute*	
1	ſanctifier,	ac.	*to ſanctify*	
1	ſaper,	ac.	*to ſap*	
1	ſarcler,	ac.	*to weed*	
1	ſatyriſer,	ac.	*to ſatirize*	
6	ſatisfaire,	ac.	*to ſatisfy*	
ir.	ſavoir,	ac.	*to know*	o
1	ſauter,	ac.	*to leap, to jump*	
1	ſauver,	ac.	*to ſave*	
1	ſcandaliſer,	ac.	*to ſcandalize*	de
1	ſcier,	ac.	*to ſaw*	
1	ſculpter,	ac.	*to engrave*	
1	ſécher,	ac.	*to dry*	
1	ſéconder,	ac.	*to help*	
1	ſécouer,	ac.	*to ſhake*	
ir.	ſécourir,	ac.	*to relieve*	
9	ſéduire,	ac.	*to ſeduce*	
1	ſéjourner,		*to ſtay in a place*	
1	ſembler,		*to ſeem* (ind. ſubj.)	o
1	ſémer,	ac.	*to ſow*	
3	ſentir,	ac.	*to feel, to ſmell*	o
ir.	s'enquérir,	ge.	*to inquire*	
1	ſéqueſtrer,	ac.	*to ſequeſtrate*	
1	ſerrer,		*to ſqueeze*	
3	ſervir,	ac.	*to ſerve*	à
1	ſévrer,	ac.	*to wean*	

1	ſiffler,		*to whiſtle*		
1	ſignaler,		*to make famous*		
1	ſigner,	ac.	*to ſubſcribe*		
1	ſignifier,	da. ac.	*to notify*	-	de
1	ſolliciter,	ge. ac.	*to ſolicitate*	-	à *or* de
1	ſommeiller,		*to ſlumber*		
1	ſommer,	ac.	*to ſummon*	-	de
1	ſonder,	ac.	*to ſound*		
1	ſonger,	da.	*to think*	-	à
1	ſonner,	ac.	*to ring*		
3	ſortir,		*to go out*		
1	ſe ſoucier,	ge.	*to care for*	-	de
1	ſouffler,	ac.	*to blow*		
ir.	ſouffrir,	ac.	*to ſuffer*	(ſubj.)	o
1	ſouhaiter,	ac.	*to wiſh*	- (ſubj.)	o
1	ſouiller,	ac.	*to dirty*		
1	ſoulager,	ac.	*to relieve*		
1	ſe ſoûler,		*to cloy one's ſelf*		
1	ſoulever,	ac.	*to raiſe*		
ir.	ſoumettre,	ac.	*to ſubmit*	-	à
1	ſoupçonner,	ge. ac.	*to ſuſpect*	-	de
1	ſouper,		*to ſup*		
1	ſoupirer,		*to ſigh*		
ir.	ſourire,		*to ſmile*		
ir.	ſouſcrire,	da.	*to ſubſcribe*		
ir.	ſouſtraire,	da. ac.	*to ſubtract*		
4	ſoutenir,	ac.	*to maintain*	(ind. ſubj.)	o
4	ſe ſouvenir,	ge.	*to remember*	-	de
1	ſpécifier,	ac.	*to ſpecify*		
1	ſtatuer,		*to ordain*	-	de
1	ſtipuler,	ac.	*to ſtipulate*		
1	ſtupéfier,	ac.	*to ſtupefy*		
1	ſubdiviſer,	ac.	*to ſub-divide*		
2	ſubir,	ac.	*to undergo*		
1	ſubmerger,		*to ſink*		
1	ſubordonner,	da. ac.	*to ſubordinate*		
1	ſuborner,	ac.	*to corrupt*		
1	ſubroger,	ac.	*to ſubſtitute*		
1	ſubſiſter,		*to ſubſiſt*		
1	ſubſtituer,	da. ac.	*to ſubſtitute*		
1	ſubtiliſer,	ac.	*to ſubtilize*		

4	ſubvenir,	da. *or* ac.	*to relieve*	
1	ſuccéder,	da.	*to ſucceed*	
1	ſucrer,	ac.	*to ſugar*	
9	ſuffire,	da.	*to ſuffice* -	de
1	ſuffoquer,	ac.	*to ſtifle*	
1	ſuggérer,	da. ac.	*to ſuggeſt* -	de
ir.	ſuivre,	ac.	*to follow*	
1	ſupplanter,	ac.	*to ſupplant*	
1	ſuppléer,	da.	*to ſupply*	
1	ſupplier,	ge. ac.	*to intreat* (ſubj.)	de
1	ſupporter,	ac.	*to ſuffer, to bear up*	
1	ſuppoſer,	ac.	*to ſuppoſe* (ind. ſubj.)	
1	ſupprimer,	ac.	*to ſuppreſs*	
1	ſupputer,	ac.	*to compute*	
1	ſurcharger,	ac.	*to overcharge*	
6	ſurfaire,	ac.	*to exact*	
1	ſurmonter,	ac.	*to excel*	
1	ſurnager,		*to ſwim over*	
1	ſurpaſſer,	ac.	*to excel*	
ir.	ſurprendre,	ac.	*to ſurpriſe* -	o
ir.	ſurvivre,	da.	*to ſurvive*	
10	ſuſpendre,	ac.	*to hang up*	
1	ſuſtenter,	ac.	*to maintain*	
1	ſympatiſer,		*to ſympathize*	

T

1	Tacher,	ac.	*to ſtain*	
1	tâcher,		*to endeavour* -	de
1	tacheter,	ac.	*to ſpeckle*	
1	tailler,	ac.	*to cut out*	
ir.	taire,	ac.	*to conceal*	
1	tamiſer,	ac.	*to ſift*	
1	taner,	ac.	*to tan*	
1	tapiſſer,	ac.	*to furniſh with hangings*	
1	tarder,		*to delay* -	à
2	tarir,		*to dry up*	
1	taſſer,	ac.	*to heap up*	
1	tâter,	ac.	*to feel*	
1	taxer,	ac.	*to tax*	
7	teindre,	ac.	*to dye*	

1	tempérer,	ac.	*to allay*	
1	temporiſer,		*to delay*	
10	tendre,	ac.	*to bend*	à
4	tenir,	ac.	*to hold*	
1	tenter,	ac.	*to tempt*	de
1	tergiverſer,		*to ſhift*	
1	terminer,	ac.	*to terminate*	
1	terraſſer,	ac.	*to throw down*	
1	tirer,	ac.	*to draw*	
1	tirer,		*to ſhoot*	
1	toiſer,	ac.	*to meaſure*	
1	tolérer,	ac.	*to tolerate*	
1	tomber,		*to fall*	
10	tondre,	ac.	*to ſhear*	
imp.	tonner,		*to thunder*	
1	toucher,	ac.	*to touch*	
1	tourmenter,	ac.	*to plague*	
1	tourner,	ac.	*to turn round*	
1	tournoyer,		*to whirl about*	
1	touſſer,		*to cough*	
1	tracer,	ac.	*to draw*	
9	traduire,	ac.	*to tranſlate*	
1	trafiquer,		*to trade*	
2	trahir,	ac.	*to betray*	
1	traîner,	ac.	*to drag along*	
ir.	traire,	ac.	*to milk*	
1	traiter,	ac.	*to treat*	
1	tramer,	ge. ac.	*to plot*	
1	trancher,	ge. ac.	*to cut off*	
1	tranquiliſer,	ac.	*to quiet*	
ir.	tranſcrire,	ac.	*to tranſcribe*	
1	transférer,	ac.	*to transfer*	
1	transformer,	ac.	*to transform*	
1	tranſgreſſer,	ge. ac.	*to tranſgreſs*	
1	tranſiger,		*to tranſact*	
ir.	tranſmettre,	da. ac.	*to tranſmit*	
1	tranſpirer,		*to tranſpire*	
1	tranſplanter,	ac.	*to tranſplant*	
1	tranſporter,	ac.	*to transfer*	
1	tranſpoſer,	ac.	*to tranſpoſe*	
1	tranſvaſer,	ac.	*to decant*	

1	travailler,		*to work* -	pour
1	traverſer,	ac.	*to croſs*	
2	ſe traveſtir,		*to diſguiſe one's ſelf*	
1	trébucher,		*to ſtumble*	
1	trembler,		*to ſhiver,*	
1	tremper,	ac.	*to dip*	
1	trépaner,	ac.	*to trepan*	
ir.	treſſaillir,		*to ſtart*	
1	tricoter,		*to knit*	
1	triompher,	ge.	*to triumph*	
1	tripler,		*to treble*	
1	tromper,	ac.	*to deceive*	
1	tronquer,	ac.	*to mutilate*	
1	troquer,	ac.	*to barter*	
1	trotter,		*to trot*	
1	troubler,	ac.	*to trouble*	
1	trouver.	ac.	*to find out*	
1	tyranniſer,	ac.	*to oppreſs*	

V

1	vaciller,		*to ſtagger*	
ir.	vaincre,	ac.	*to vanquiſh*	
ir.	valoir,	ac.	*to be worth*	
1	vanter,	ac.	*to commend*	
1	ſe vanter,	ge.	*to boaſt* -	de
1	végéter,		*to vegetate*	
1	veiller,		*to watch*	
10	vendre,	ac.	*to ſell* -	à
4	venir,		*to come* -	o
1	venter,		*to blow*	
2	verdir,		*to become green*	
1	vergetter,	ac.	*to bruſh*	
1	vérifier,	ac.	*to verify*	
2	vernir,	ac.	*to varniſh*	
1	verniſſer,	ac.	*to varniſh*	
1	vexer,	ac.	*to vex*	
1	vicier,	ac.	*to vitiate*	
1	vuider,	ac.	*to empty*	
2	viellir,		*to grow old*	
1	violer,	ac.	*to tranſgreſs, to violate*	

1	viſer,	da.	*to aim at*	à
1	vitrer,	ac.	*to glaze*	
ir.	vivre,		*to live*	pour
1	ulcérer,		*to ulcerate*	
2	unir,	ac.	*to unite*	
ir.	voir,	ac.	*to ſee*	(ind. ſubj.) o
1	voler,		*to fly, to rob*	
1	vouer,		*to devote*	
ir.	vouloir,	ac.	*to be willing*	(ſubj.) o
1	uſer,	ge.	*to uſe.*	
1	uſer,	ac.	*to wear off*	

DIALOGUES.

DIALOGUE I. *Sur l'Hiſtoire de France.*

D. Combien y a-t-il eu de rois en France depuis Pharamond juſqu'à Louis ſeize?

R. Soixante Sept.

D. Nommez-les dans l'ordre qu'ils ont regné, mettez en titre le nom de chaque famille et apres chaque roi l'année où il a commencé ſon régne?

R. Volontiers, mais à condition que vous les apprendrez par cœur.

ROIS DE FRANCE.

22 *Mérovingiens.*

Pharamond	420	Chérébert	561
Clodion	428	Chilpéric I.	570
Mérovée	448	Clotaire II.	584
Childéric I.	458	Dagobert I.	629
Clovis I.	482	Clovis II.	648
Childébert I.	511	Clotaire III.	655
Clotaire I.	558	Childéric II.	669
		Théodoric I.	678

Clovis III.	691	Louïs VI.	1108
Childeberd II.	695	Louïs VII.	1137
Dagobert II.	711	Philippe II.	1180
Clotaire IV.	716	Louïs VIII.	1223
Chilpéric II.	719	Louïs IX.	1226
Théodoric II.	721	Philippe III.	1270
Childéric III.	743	Philippe *le bel*	1286
		Louïs X.	1314
11 *Carlovingiens.*		Philippe V.	1317
Pépin	751	Charles IV.	1322
Charlemagne	768	Philippe *de Valois*	1328
Louïs I.	814	Jean	1350
Charles *le Chauve*	840	Charles V.	1364
Louïs II.	877	Charles VI.	1380
Louïs III.	879	Charles VII.	1422
Charles II.	884	Louïs XI.	1461
Eudes*	888	Charles VIII.	1483
Charles III.	893	Louïs XII.	1498
Raoul*	923	François I.	1515
Louïs IV.	936	Henri II.	1547
Lothaire	954	François II.	1559
Louïs V.	886	Charles IX.	1560
		Henri III.	1574
32 *Capétiens.*		Henri IV.	1589
Hugue Capet	987	Louïs XIII.	1610
Robert	996	Louïs XIV.	1643
Henri I.	1038	Louïs XV.	1715
Philippe I.	1060	Louïs XVI.	1774

D. Quels ſont les Rois qui ont plus particulierement protégé les ſciences?

R. Charlemagne, Robert, Philippe le bel, François Premier et Louïs Quatorze.

D. Combien de Rois ont eu des morts tragiques?

R. Sept, ſavoir Chilpéric, Childéric, Charles le Chauve, Lothaire, Henri Trois, Henri Quatre Louis et Seize. Chilpéric fut aſſaſſiné par un de ſes nobles l'an 584. Childéric Second

* *Eudes et Raoul ne ſont point de la famille des Carlovingiens. Eudes étoit comte de Paris et duc de France. Raoul étoit duc de Bourgogne.*

fut tué en revenant de la chaſſe l'an 673. Charles le Chauve fut empoiſoné par ſon medecin l'an 877. Lothaire fut empoiſoné par ſa femme l'an 986. Henri Trois fut aſſaſſiné par Jacques clément l'an 1589. Henri Quatre fut tué par Ravaillac en 1610. Louïs Seize fut décapité par ordre de la Convention Nationale en 1793.

D. Y a-t-il eu des guerres civiles en France?

R. Oui particulierement quatre; la première arriva à la mort de Louïs Premier, qui avoit nommé Charles le Chauve ſon jeune fils pour ſon ſucceſſeur par préférence à Lothaire ſon fils aîné, Lothaire diſputa la couronne et la bataille la plus ſanglante qui ait été livrée depuis le commencement de la monarchie Françoiſe ſe donna entre les fils de Louïs à Fontenoi l'an 841.

La ſeconde fut entre Henri Premier et ſa mère conſtance qui vouloit mettre ſur le trône Robert ſon jeune frère.

La troiſième fut excitée par les calviniſtes qui ſe liguèrent et attaquèrent Henri Trois en 1580, ils prirent pluſieurs places fortes et livrèrent bien des combats avant qu'on pût les reduire.

La quatrième commençá l'an 1793, dans la Brétagne, elle fut très cruelle, et très ſanglante.

Le parti royaliſte a couté plus de cent mille hommes avant d'être détruit.

D. Nommez-moi quelques faits rémarquables depuis Pharamond juſqu'au douzième ſiécle?

R. Clovis Premier ſe fit baptiſer et établit le Chriſtianiſme l'an 496. En cinq cent quatrevingt trois une peſte cruelle déſola toute la France et ſurtout Paris. Childeric trois et dernier de la famille des Mérovingiens fut dépoſé et enfermé dans un monaſtere, l'an 751. Pépin fut élu à ſa place par les etats aſſemblés à Soiſſons. La célébre Univerſité de Paris commença ſous Charlemagne en 796.

En neuf cent vingt trois, Charles Quatre dit le ſimple fut dépoſé par les ſeigneurs qui mîrent Raöul ſur le trône, Charles fut arrêté peu de tems après et renfermé dans le Chateau de Thieri où il mourut.

Il y eut une famine ſi cruelle en 1033. qu'au raport des hiſtoriens on deroboit les petits enfans pour les manger, et qu'on attendoit les voyageurs au coin des bois pour les devorer. Les croiſades pour la terre ſainte commencèrent en

1696. Le Poitou et L'Aquitaine furent joints à la couronne de France en 1139.

D. Rapportez-moi quelques faits remarquables depuis le douzième siécle jusqu'à Louis Seize ?

R. Les Tribunaux furent établis dans toute la France en 1282. Humbert attacha le dauphiné à la couronne de France en 1049, à condition que le fils aîné du Roi en porteroit le nom et les armes. En 1356 Jean et son fils furent faits prisoniers par Edouard Trois Roi d'Angleterre qui prétendoit à la couronne de France au droit de sa mère, mais qui en étoit exlu par la loi salique. Henri Six Roi d'Angleterre fut couronné Roi de France l'an 1400, au droit de son père qui avoit été nommé héritier de la couronne, mais le Dauphin soutint ses droits, se fit reconnoître et chassa Henri Six de ses états. La France fut un théatre de carnage en 1569. Charles neuf fit égorger les Calvinistes à Paris en 1572. Les Calvinistes excitèrent une guerre civile en 1579.

Henri Quatre qui avoit été élevé dans la religion Protestante, se convertit à la religion Catholique et par sa conversion appaisa les troubles et les querres civiles qui désoloient la France.

Louis Quatoze qui régna près de soixante douze ans détruisit les duels, protegea les sciences, et récompensa toujours le mérite : il réussit à maintenir son petit fils Charles Cinq sur le trône d'Espagne, malgré plusieurs Rois ligués contre lui. Louis Seize assembla les états généraux en 1789, pour réparer l'état de ses finances ; cette assemblée a opéré la révolution Françoise dont l'histoire seule demande des volumes entiers.

DIALOGUE. *Sur l'Hiſtoire d'Angleterre.*

D. Combien y a-t-il eu de Rois et de Reines en Angleterre depuis l'éptarchie Saxonne ?

R. Il y a eu quarante neuf Rois, et trois Reines.

D. Nommez-les dans l'ordre qu'ils ont régné, mettez en titre le nom de chaque famille, et après chaque Roi, l'époque où il a commencé à régner.

R. Volontiers, mais ſoyez attentif et tâchez de vous en reſſouvenir.

ROIS D'ANGLETERRE.

15 *Saxons.*	
Egbert . .	819
Ethelwolf .	838
Ethelbald .	857
Ethelbert .	860
Ethelred I. .	866
Alfred . .	872
Edouard *le vieux* .	900
Athelſtan . .	925
Edmond I. .	940
Edred . .	946
Edwin . .	955
Edgar . .	959
Edouard *le jeune*	975
Ethelred II. .	979
Edmond II. .	1016
3 *Danois.*	
Canut . .	1018
Harold I. .	1037
Hardi-Canut .	1040
Encore 2 *Saxons.*	
Edouard *le Confeſs.*	1041
Harold II. .	1065
3 *Normans.*	
Guillaume *le Conq.*	1066
Guillaume *le roux*	1087
Henri I. . .	1100
Maiſon de Blois.	
Etienne . .	1135
8 *Plantagenets.*	
Henri II. .	1154
Richard I. *Cœur de Lion*	1189
Jean *ſans terre*	1199
Henri IiI. .	1216
Edouard I. .	1274
Edouard II. .	1307
Edouard III. .	1327
Richard II. .	1377
3 *Lancaſtres.*	
Henri IV. .	1399
Henri V. .	1413
Henri VI. .	1422
3 *Yorks.*	
Edouard IV. .	1461
Edouard V. .	1483
Richard III. .	1483
5 *Tudors.*	
Henri VII. .	1485

Henri VIII.	.	1509	Jacques II.	.	1685
Edouard VI.	.	1547	Guillaume *et* Marie		1689
Marie	.	1553	Anne	.	1702
Elizabeth	.	1558			
6 *Stuarts.*			3 *Brunſwicks.*		
Jacques I.	.	1603	George I.	.	1714
Charles I.	.	1625	George II.	.	1727
Charles II.	.	1660	George III.	.	1760

D. Quels droits avoient à la couronne les premiers Rois de chaque famille?

R. Egbert étoit un des Rois de l'eptarchie Saxonne, il ſoumit les ſix autres et ſe fit couronner Roi de la Brétagne ſupérieure à la quelle il donna le nom d'Angleterre.

Canut, Prince Danois avoit partagé l'Angleterre avec Edmond et fut reconnu Roi de tout le royaume a ſa mort du dernier, il n'y avoit d'autre droit que celui de conquête.

Guillaume, Duc de Normandie, fit la conquête de l'Angleterre, et prit de titre de Conquérant.

Etienne de Blois s'empara du trône dans l'abſence de Mathilde fille de Henri Premier, et héritiére légitime.

Henri Second, fils de Mathilde, monta ſur le trône à la mort d'Etienne, qui pour mettre fin à la guerre civile s'étoit engagé par un traité a lui laiſſer la couronne au préjudice de ſes propres enfans.

Henri Quatre fut élevé ſur le trône au préjudice d'Edmond Mortimer, ce qui occaſiona de funeſtes diviſions entre les maiſons d'York et de Lancaſtre.

Edouard Quatre, de la maiſon d'York, qui ſe croyoit héritier de la couronne, réuſſit à détroner Henri Six après une guerre civile.

Henri Sept, de la famille des Tudors, avoit du côté de ſa mère tous les droits de la famille de Lancaſtre à la couronne, et du côté de ſa femme tous ceux de la maiſon d'York.

Jacques Premier, Roi d'Ecoſſe, étoit le plus proche parent d'Elizabeth, qui l'avoit nommé pour ſon ſucceſſeur dans ſon teſtament.

George Premier étoit ſorti de la maiſon des Stuarts, par ſa mère petite fille de Jacques Premier; la Reine Anne l'avoit nommé ſon ſucceſſeur.

D. Combien de Rois ont été tués en combattant?

R. Trois, Etheldred Premier fut tué dans une bataille contre les Danois qui venoient continuellement ravager ſon pays. Harold Deux fut tué dans une bataille contre Guillaume le Conquérant. Richard Trois fut tué dans une bataille contre Henri Sept.

D. Combien de Rois ont eu une mort tragique?

R. Les neuf ſuivans, Edouard Premier, Edouard le Jeune, Edmond Deux, Guillaume le Roux, Richard Premier, Edouard Deux, Richard Deux, Edouard Cinq, et Charles Premier.

1. Edmond Premier fut aſſaſſiné par un nommé Léof ſcélerat renommé que le Roi avoit envoyé en exil. Edouard le Jeune fut aſſaſſiné par les ordres de ſa belle mère Elfride, qui vouloit faire régner ſon propre fils Ethelred Second. 3. Edmond Deux fut cruellement aſſaſſiné par les domeſtiques de ſon beau frère Edrick à qui Canut fit trancher la tête. 4. Guillaume le Roux, étant à la chaſſe fut tué d'un coup de fléche tiré ſans deſſein par un de ſes domeſtiques. 5. Richard Premier, ſurnommé Cœur de Lion, voulant obliger un Seigneur Limouſin à lui rendre un tréſoir qu'il avoit trouvé, s'aprocha du chateau de ce gentilhomme pour l'attaquer, il reçut un coup de fléche dont il mourut. 6. Edouard Deux fut depoſé par le Parlement et enfermé au chateau de Berkley où il fut cruellement aſſaſſiné. 7. Richard Deux fut depoſé par le Parlement, et enfermé dans le chateau de Pontéfract, où il fut inhumainement aſſaſſiné par l'ordre de Henri Quatre, chef des mecontens qui fut élu à ſa place. 8. Edouard Cinq, et ſon frère, le Duc d'York, furent enfermés à la Tour, et enſuite etoufés dans leur lit par l'ordre du Duc de Glocester, qui prit le nom de Richard Trois quand il fut monté ſur le trône. 9. Charles Premier fut decapité par ordre le Parlement, le 30 Janvier 1649; ſon fils, Charles Deux, ne monta ſur le trône qu'en 1660, onze ans aprés la mort de ſon père.

D. L'Angleterre a-t-elle eu bien des guerres étrangères à ſoutenir?

R. Oui, du tems des Rois Saxons, les Danois y firent des deſcentes fréquentes pendant plus de deux cens ans. Il a eu beaucoup de guerres entre l'Angleterre et la France depuis Guillaume le Conquérant, mais particulierement depuis la Reine Anne; elle a eu auſſi des guerres contre l'Eſpagne, contre la Holande, et contre l'Amérique.

D. Y a-t-il eu plusieurs guerres civiles en Angleterre ?

R. Oui, et nous pouvons compter entre autres les quatre suivantes comme les plus mémorables. La première commença en 1135, quand Etienne de Blois monta sur le trône au préjudice de Mathilde, fille unique et légitime héritière de Henri Premier. La seconde arriva sous le regne de Richard Second, et finit par le déposer. La troisième fut suscitée par la maison d'York, et finit par mettre Edouard Quatre sur le trône à la place de Henri Six, qui fut déposé. La quatrième fut celle du Parlement contre Charles Premier, ce Prince malheureux fut vaincu et décapité.

D. Depuis quand les Rois d'Angleterre prennent-ils le titre de Rois de France ?

R. Depuis Edouard Trois qui avoit épousé la sœur de Charles Quatre qui mourut sans enfans, il étoit exclu de la couronne par la loi Salique, cependant il prit le titre de Roi de France que ses successeurs ont toujours conservé.

D. Y a-t-il eu des Rois d'Angleterre qui aient été couronné Rois de France ?

R. Oui, Henri Six encore enfant fut couronné Roi de France dans l'église Notre-Dame de Paris, l'an 1430.

D. Quels droits avoit-il à la couronne ?

R. Son père avoit épousé Cathérine, fille de Charles Six, Roi de France, qui l'avoit reconnu pour héritier de sa couronne au préjudice du Dauphin.

D. Henri Six jouit-il longtems de la couronne de France ?

R. Non, le Dauphin connu sous le nom de Charles Sept se fit aussi couronner Roi de France, il soutint son droit, reprit toutes les villes que son père avoit perdues, et chassa Henri Six de son royaume. Jeanne d'Arc (surnommée la Pucelle d'Orleans) fit des choses extraordinaires dans cette guerre contre les Anglois.

D. Y a-t-il eu plusieurs pestes en Angleterre ?

R. Oui, et de très cruelles ; il y eut une peste désastreuse en 1094, une seconde en 1349, une troisième en 1407, une quatrième en 1603, et la dernière en 1665 en 66.

D. Y a-t-il eu des incendies considérables à Londres ?

R. Oui, particulièrement deux, le premier arriva en 1182, et brula une très grande partie de Londres ; le second en 1666,

Il y eut quatre vingt neuf égliſes et plus de treize mille maiſons de brulées.

D. Nommez-moi deux ou trois époques conſidérables de l'Hiſtoire l'Angleterre ?

R. Les trois événemens les plus intéreſſans ſont. 1. La conquête d'Angleterre par Guillaume Duc de Normandie, en mil ſoixante ſix. 2. La reforme que Luther commença en mil cinq cent dix-ſept. 3. La revolution que Cromwell et le Parlement opérèrent en Angleterre, et dans la quelle Charles Premier fut décapité.

D. En quoi conſiſte l'autorité des Rois d'Angleterre ?

R. Ils ont le pouvoir de faire la paix et la guerre, ils diſpoſent des armées de terre et de mer, ils peuveut ſeuls convoquer, proroger ou caſſer le Parlement ; les décrets paſſés dans les deux chambres, n'ont pas force de loi ſans leur conſentement formel : ils donnent les places de l'état, diſpoſent des charges de la magiſtrature et nomment à tous les évêchés.

FINIS.

20 MA 59

Juſt publiſhed, price 2s. 6d. bound,

GRAMMATICAL EXERCISES upon the FRENCH LANGUAGE compared with the ENGLISH, correſponding to this GRAMMAR. By NICOLAS HAMEL, Graduate in the Univerſity of Caen, and Rector of the Town of l'Aigle, in Normandy.

Printed for LEE and HURST, No. 32, Pater-Noſter Row, London.